JONATHAN WILD.



HISTORY

OFTHE

L F E

OF

MR JONATHAN WILD THE GREAT.

To which is added

A JOURNEY from this World to the Next.

By HENRY FIELDING, Efq;

LONDON:
Printed for JOHN BELL, No 132. Strand.
M. DCC. LXXV.



THE RESIDENCE

MARTAZOTAL

WARRED FOR THE RESERVE

1 100 0 G 10 00 14

H. P.C. L. L. R. T.

The

Mi

THE RESIDENCE OF THE PARTY OF THE PROPERTY OF THE PROPERTY OF THE PARTY OF THE PART

TO THE BUT HE OF

CONTENTS.

History of JONATHAN WILD, &c.

willing the tenth was mant to have the best military and

BOOKI.

C H A P. I.

Hewing the wholesome uses drawn from recording the atchievements of those wonderful productions of Nature called GREAT MEN. Page 1.

C H A P. II.

Giving an account of as many of our hero's ancestors as can be gathered out of the rubbish of antiquity, which hath been carefully sifted for that purpose.

C H A P. III.

The birth, parentage, and education of Mr Jonathan Wild the Great.

C H A P. IV.

Mr Wild's first entrance into the world. His acquaintance with Count La Rufe.

A CHAP.

CONTENTS.

C H A P. V.

A dialogue between young Master Wild and Count La Ruse, which having extended to the rejoinder, had a very quiet, easy and natural conclusion. Page 14

C H A P. VI.

Further conferences between the Count and Master Wild, with other matters of the GREAT kind. 19

C H A P. VII.

Master Wild sets out on his travels, and returns home again. A very short chapter, containing infinitely more time and less matter than any other in the whole story.

C H A P. VIII.

An adventure where Wild, in the division of the booty, exhibits an astonishing instance of GREATNESS. 23

C H A P. IX.

Wild pays a visit to Miss Latitia Snap. A description of that lovely young creature, and the successless issue of Mr Wild's addresses.

C H A P. X.

A discovery of some matters concerning the chaste Lætitia, which must wonderfully surprize, and perhaps affect our reader.

CHAP. XI.

Containing as notable instances of human greathess as are to be met with in antient or modern history. Concluding with some wholes ne hints to the gay part of mankind.

C H A P. XII.

Further particulars relating to Miss Tishy, which, perhaps, may not greatly surprise after the sormer. The description of a very fine gentleman. And a dialogue between Wild and the Count, in which public virtue is just hinted at, with, &c.

CHAP.

CONTENTS

CHAP. XIII.

A chapter, of which we are extremely vain, and which indeed we look on as our chef d'oeuvre, containing a wonderful story concerning the devil, and as nice a scene of honour as ever happened.

C H A P. XIV.

In which the history of GREATNESS is continued. 42

BOOK IL

C H A P. I.

Characters of filly people, with the proper uses for which such are designed.

CHAP. II.

Great examples of Greatness in Wild, shewn as well by his behaviour to Bagshot, as in a scheme laid first 10 impose on Heartsree by means of the Count, and then to cheat the Count of the booty.

C H A P. III.

Containing scenes of softness, love and honour, all in the great stile.

C H A P. IV.

In which Wild, after many fruitless endeavours to discover his friend, moralizes on his missortunes, in a speech, which may be of use (if rightly understood) to some other considerable speech-makers.

C H A P. V.

Containing many surprising adventures, which our Hero with GREAT GREATNESS atchieved. 65

C H A P. VI.

Of Hats.

CHAP.

Az

35 P.

4

ly

le

I

p- 13

ias

ect

30

ire

ng

32

er-

The

que

2 85

CONTENTS.

C H A P. VII.

Shewing the consequence which attended Heartfree's adventures with Wild; all natural, and common enough to little wretches who deal with Great men; together with some precedents of letters, being the different methods of answering a dun.

C H A P. VIII.

In which our Hero carries Greatness to an immoderate beight.

C H A P. IX.

More GREATNESS in Wild. A low scene between Mrs Heartfree and her children, and a scheme of our hero worthy the highest admiration, and even astonishment.

C H A P. X.

Sea adventures very new and surprising.

82

79

C H A P. XI.

The great and wonderful behaviour of our Hero in the boat.

C H A P. XII.

The strange and yet natural escape of our Hero. 86

C H A P. XIII.

The conclusion of the boat adventure, and the end of the fecond book.

BOOK III.

C H A P. I.

The low and pitiful behaviour of Heartfree; and the foolish conduct of his apprentice.

OHAP.

CONTENTS

C H A P. II.

A soliloquy of Heartfree's, full of low and base ideas without a syllable of GREATNESS.

C H A P. III.

Wherein our Hero proceeds in the road to Greatness. 99

C H A P. IV.

In which a young hero, of wonderful good premise, makes his first appearance, with many other Great mat ters.

C H A. Pass V. Pressure views

More and more GREATNESS, unparalleled in history or romance.

C H A P. VI.

The event of Fireblood's adventure, and a treaty of marriage, which might have been concluded either at Smithfield or St James's.

C H A P. VII.

Matters preliminary to the marriage between Mr Jonathan Wild and the chaste Letitia. 112

C H A P. VIII.

A dialogue matrimonial, which passed between Jonathan Wild Esquire, and Lætitia his wise, on the morning of the day fortnight on which the nuptials were celebrated; which concluded more amicably than those debates generally do.

114

C H A P. IX.

Observations on the foregoing dialogue, together with a base design on our hero, which must be detested by every lover of GREATNESS.

C H A P. X.

Mr Wild with unprecedented generosity visits his friend.

Heartfree, and the ungrateful reception he met with.

CHAP.

Carried actions

A 3

be

1-

6

?

ıt

2

te

5

ro

t.

9

2

be

4

6

9

CONTENTS.

C H A P. XI.

A scheme so deeply laid that it shames all the politics of this our age; with digression and sub-digression. 125

C H A P. XII.

New instances of Friendly's folly, &c.

127

C H A P. XIII.

Something concerning Fireblood, which will surprize and fomewhat touching one of the Miss Snaps, which will greatly concern the reader.

C H A P. XIV.

In which our Hero makes a speech well worthy to be celebrated; and the behaviour of one of the gang perhaps more unnatural than any other part of this history. 132

BOOK IV.

CHAP. I.

A sentiment of the Ordinary's, worthy to be written in letters of gold; a very extraordinary instance of folly in Friendly; and a dreadful accident that befel our bero.

C H A P. II.

A short hint concerning popular ingratitude. Mr Wild's arrival in the castle, with other occurrences to be sound in no other bistory.

C H A P. III.

Curious anecdotes relating to the history of Newgate. 146

C. H. A. P. J. IV.

The dead warrant arrives for Heartfree; on which occasion Wild betrays some human weakness. 152 C. H. A. P.

CONTENTS

of 25

27

nd ill

le-

intelly use 38

5 P.

biftory.

C H A P. V.	
Containing various matters.	13
C H A P. VI.	. · ·
In which the foregoing happy incident is accou	inted
for.	156
C H A P. VII.	
Mrs Heartfree relates ber adventures.	159
CHAP. VIII.	
In which Mrs Heartfree continues the relation of	Char
	146
CHAP.IX.	(2)
Containing incidents very surprising.	168
which entire was the pulement retails. Here	2
A horrible uproar in the Gate.	9
a portione uprout in the Gate.	174
CHAP. XI.	Sep.
The conclusion of Mrs Heartfree's adventures.	176
C H A P. XII.	•
The history returns to the contemplation of GRE	
NESS. C H A P. XIII.	181
A dialogue between the Ordinary of Newgate and	Mr.
Jonathan Wild the Great: In which the subject	7.s of
death, immortality, and other grave matters, are learnedly handled by the former.	very 183
	103
C H A P. XIV.	
Wild proceeds to the highest consummation of man GREATNESS.	190
The character of our hero, and the conclusion of	7.
The character of our pero, and the conclude of	A DIX.

JOURNEY from this World to the Next, &c.

INTRODUCTION.

Page 203.

BOOK I.

C H A P. I.

The author dies, meets with Mercury, and is by him conducted to the stage which sets out for the other world.

CHAP. II.

In which the author first resutes some idle opinions concerning spirits, and then the passengers relate their several deaths.

C H A P. III.

The adventures we met with in the City of Difeases. 213

C. H A P. IV.

Discourses on the road, and a description of the palace of Death.

C H A P. V.

The travellers proceed on their journey, and meet several spirits, who are coming into the flesh. 223.

C H A P. VI.

An account of the wheel of Fortune, with the method of preparing a spirit for this world.

C H A P. VII.

The proceedings of Judge Minos, at the gate of Elyfium.

230

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

C H A P. VIII.	
The adventures which the author met on his first of into Elysium.	entrance 235
CHAP. IX.	Service of the
More adventures in Elysium.	238
C H A P. X.	1000
The author is surprized at meeting Julian the Ap Elysium: but is satisfied by him, by what m procured his entrance there. Julian relates hi tures in the character of a slave.	eans be
C H A P. XI.	
In which Julian relates his adventures in the ch	haracter
of an avaricious Jew.	248
C H A P. XII.	
What happened to Julian in the characters of a an heir, a carpenter, and a beau.	general, 252
C H A P. XIII.	
Julian passes into a fop.	256
C H A P. XIV.	
Adventures in the person of a monk.	257
C H A P. XV.	
Julian passes into the character of a siddler.	200
	259
C H A P. XVI.	
The history of the wise man.	263
· C H A P. XVII.	
Julian enters into the person of a King.	270
C H A P. XVIII.	•
Julian passes into a fool.	277 H A P.

m 6

ir 9

ce

7

CONTENTS.

	СН	A P.	XIX.	
Julian app	ears in the	character	of a beggar.	281
	C H	A P.	XX.	1 2 2 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1
Julian perf	forms the p	art of a A	atesman.	286
	СН	A P.	XXI.	There are
Julian's aa	lventures in	the post	of a soldier.	292
at satalyay	СН	A P.	XXII.	
What bappe	ned to Juli	ian in the	person of a tay	lor. 298
	СН	A P.	XXIII.	b. 4.5
The life of				302
ary state of	СН	A P.	XXIV.	As well in
Julian rec	ounts wha	t happen	ed to him whi	le he was
	СН	A P.	xxv.	in not have to
Julian per	forms the	part of a	knight and a	dancing-

B O O K XIX.

31I

master.

263

C H A P. VII.

Wherein Anna Boleyn relates the history of her life. 313.

Parely of the best for the state of

committee and a second state of the second and the

Philips pully into a your.

ANY SAHO

- T H- E

281

286

192

298

302

was

307

ng-

311

HISTORY

OFTHE

L I F E

OR

Mr JONATHAN WILD, THE GREAT.

William to the second of the s

THE PERSON OF THE PROPERTY.

Commence of the second second



I A D. I HOT

m di m hi bu he ge ex of

tai pr to

HISTORY

OFTHE

L I F E

OF THE LATE

Mr JONATHAN WILD, THE GREAT.

BOOKL

C H A P. I.

Shewing the wholesome uses drawn from recording the atchievements of those wonderful productions of Nature called GREAT MEN.

S it is necessary that all great and surprising events, the designs of which are laid, conducted, and brought to perfection by the utmost force of human invention and art, should be produced by great and eminent men, so the lives of such may be justly and properly stiled the quintessence of history. In these, when delivered to us by sensible writers, we are not only most agreeably entertained, but most usefully instructed: for besides the attaining hence a consummate knowledge of human nature in general; of its fecret springs, various windings, and perplexed mazes; we have here before our eyes lively examples of whatever is amiable or detestable, worthy of admiration or abhorrence, and are consequently taught, in a manner infinitely more effectual than by precept, what we are eagerly to imitate or carefully to avoid.

B

But besides the two obvious advantages of surveying, as it were in a picture, the true beauty of virtue, and desormity of vice we may moreover learn from Plutarch, Nepos, Suetonius, and other biographers, this useful lesson, not too hastily, nor in the gross to bestow either our praise or censure; since we shall often find such a mixture of good and evil in the same character, that it may require a very accurate judgment, and a very elaborate enquiry to determine on which side the balance turns; for tho' we sometimes meet with an Aristides or a Brutus, a Lysander or a Nero, yet far the greater number are of the mixt kind; neither totally good nor bad; their greatest virtues being obscured and allayed by their vices, and those again softened and coloured over by their virtues.

Of this kind was the illustrious person whose history we now undertake; to whom the Nature had given the greatest and most shining endowments, she had not given them absolutely pure and without alloy. The had much of the admirable in his character, as much perhaps as is usually to be found in a hero, I will not yet venture to affirm that he was entirely free from all defects; or that the sharp eyes of Censure could not spy out some little blemishes lurking amongst his

many great perfections.

We would not therefore be understood to affect giving the reader a perfect or consummate pattern of human excellence; but rather, by faithfully recording some little imperfections, which shadowed over the lustre of those great qualities which we shall here record, to teach the lesson we have above mentioned; to induce our reader with us to lament the frailty of human nature, and to convince him that no mortal, after a thorough scrutiny, can be a proper object of our adoration.

But before we enter on this great work, we must endeavour to remove some errors of opinion which mankind have, by the disingenuity of writers, contracted: for these, from their sear of contradicting the obsolete and absurd doctrines of a set of simple sellows, called, in derision, sages or philosophers, have endeavoured, as much as possible, to consound the

ideas

id

ca

G

on

Is

fhe

uf

ne

pli

ou

gr

th

ly,

ne

ne

TU

me

an

an

of

CO

mi

ha

all

at

gr

mi

ge

ha

he

th

ob

ra

th

pe

qu

in

of

fp

ideas of greatness and goodness; whereas no two things can possibly be more distinct from each other; for Greatness consists in bringing all manner of mischief on mankind, and Goodness in removing it from them. Is feems therefore very unlikely that the same person should possess them both; and yet nothing is more usual with writers, who find many instances of greatness in their favourite hero, than to make him a compliment of goodness into the bargain; and this, without considering that by such means they destroy this great perfection called uniformity of character. the histories of Alexander and Cæsar, we are frequently, and indeed impertinently reminded of their benevolence and generofity, of their clemency and kindness. When the former had with fire and sword overrun a vast empire, had destroyed the lives of an immense number of innocent wretches, had scattered ruin and desolation like a whirlwind, we are told, as an example of his clemency, that he did not cut the throat of an old woman, and ravish her daughters, but was content with only undoing them. And when the mighty Cæfar, with wonderful greatness of mind, had destroyed the liberties of his country, and with all the means of fraud and force had placed himfelf at the head of his equals, had corrupted and enflaved the greatest people whom the fun ever faw; we are reminded as an evidence of his generofity, of his largesses to his followers and tools, by whose means he had accomplished his purpose, and by whose assistance he was to establish it.

Now, who doth not fee that fuch fneaking qualities as these are rather to be bewailed as imperfections than admired as ornaments in these great men; rather obscuring their glory, and holding them back in their race to greatness, indeed unworthy the end for which they feem to have come into the world, viz. of perpetrating vast and mighty mischief?

e

the gee

We hope our reader will have reason justly to acquit us of any fuch confounding ideas in the following pages; in which, as we are to record the actions of a great man, so we have no where mentioned any spark of goodness, which had discovered itself either

B 2

faintly

faintly in him, or more glaringly in any other person, but as a meanness and impersection, disqualifying them for undertakings which lead to honour and esteem a-

mong men.

As our hero had as little as, perhaps, is to be found of that meanness, indeed only enough to make him partaker of the imperfection of humanity, instead of the perfection of Diabolism, we have ventured to call him The Great; nor do we doubt but our reader, when he hath perused his story, will concur with us in allowing him that title.

C H A P. II.

Giving an account of as many of our hero's ancestors as can be gathered out of the rubbish of antiquity, which hath been carefully sifted for that purpose.

IT is the custom of all biographers, at their entrance into their work, to step a little backwards (as far, indeed, generally as thay are able) and to trace up their hero, as the ancients did the river Nile, till an incapacity of proceeding higher puts an end to their search.

What first gave rise to this method, is somewhat difficult to determine. Sometimes I have thought that the hero's ancestors have been introduced as foils to Again I have imagined it might be to obviate a suspicion that such extraordinary personages were not produced in the ordinary course of nature, and may have proceeded from the author's fear that if we were not told who their fathers were, they might be in danger, like prince Prettyman, of being fupposed to have had none. Lastly, and perhaps more truly, I have conjectured that the design of the biographer hath been no more than to shew his great learning and knowledge of antiquity. A defign to which the world hath probably owed many notable discoveries, and indeed most of the labours of our antiquarians.

But whatever original this custom had, it is now too well established to be disputed. I shall therefore

conform to it in the strictest manner,

n,

m

a-

bn

im

of

all,

er,

in

ich

n-

.ds

to

le,

to

at

at

to

b-

ges

re,

at

ht

p-

re

0-

eat

to

ole

n-

W

re

fr

Mr Jonathan Wild, or Wyld, then (for he him-felf did not always agree in one method of spelling his name) was descended from the great Wolfstan Wild, who came over with Hengist, and distinguished himself very eminently at that samous festival, where the Britons were so treacherously murdered by the Saxons; for when the word was given, i. e. Nemet cour Saxes, Take out your swords, this gentleman, being a little hard of hearing, mistook the sound for Nemet her Sacs, Take out their purses; instead therefore of applying to the throat, he immediately applied to the pocket of his guest, and contented himself with taking all that he had, without attempting his life.

The next ancestor of our hero, who was remarkably eminent, was Wild, surnamed Langfanger, or Longsinger. He flourished in the reign of Henry III. and was strictly attached to Hubert de Burgh, whose friendship he was recommended to by his great excellence in an art, of which Hubert was himself the inventor: he could, without the knowledge of the proprietor, with great ease and dexterity, draw forth a man's purse from any part of his garment where it was deposited, and hence he derived his surname. This gentleman was the first of his family who had the honour to suffer for the good of his country: on whom a wit of that time made the following epitaph.

O shame o' Justice! Wild is hang'd, For thatten he a pocket sang'd, While safe old Hubert, and his gang, Doth pocket o' the nation sang.

Langfanger left a son named Edward, whom he had carefully instructed in the art for which he himfelf was so samous. This Edward had a grandson who served as a volunteer under the samous Sir John Falstaff, and by his gallant demeanour so recommended himself to his captain, that he would have certainly been promoted by him, had Harry the fifth kept his word with his old companion.

After the death of Edward, the family remained in some obscurity down to the reign of Charles the first, when James Wild distinguished himself on both

B 3

fides

fides the question in the civil wars, passing from one to t'other, as Heaven seemed to declare itself in favour of either party. At the end of the war, James not being rewarded according to his merits, as is usually the case of such impartial persons, he associated himself with a brave man of those times, whose name was Hind, and declared open war with both parties. He was successful in several actions, and spoiled many of the enemy; till at length, being overpowered and taken, he was, contrary to the law of arms, put basely and cowardly to death, by a combination between twelve men of the enemy's party, who, after some consultation, unanimously agreed on the said murder.

This Edward took to wife Rebecca the daughter of the abovementioned John Hind, Esq; by whom he had iffue John, Edward, Thomas, and Jonathan, and three daughters, namely Grace, Charity, and Honour. John followed the fortunes of his father, and fuffering with him, left no issue. Edward was so remarkable for his compassionate temper, that he spent his life in foliciting the causes of the distressed captives in Newgate, and is reported to have held a strict friendship with an eminent divine, who folicited the spiritual causes of the said captives. He married Editha, daughter and co-heiress of Geoffry Snap, Gent. who long enjoyed an office under the high sheriff of London and Middlesex, by which, with great reputation, he acquired a handsome fortune: by her he had no Thomas went very young abroad to one of our American colonies, and hath not been fince heard of. As for the daughters, Grace was married to a merchant of Yorkshire, who dealt in horses. Charity took to husband an eminent gentleman, whose name I cannot learn; but who was famous for fo friendly a disposition, that he was bail for above a hundred perfons in one year. He had likewise the remarkable humour of walking in Westminster-hall with a straw in his shoe. Honour, the youngest, died unmarried. She lived many years in this town, was a great frequenter of plays, and used to be remarkable for distributing oranges to all who would accept of them.

Jonathan

Jonathan married Elizabeth, daughter of Scragg Hollow, of Hockley-in-the-Hole, Esq; and by her had Jonathan, who is the illustrious subject of these memoirs.

C H A P. III.

The birth, parentage, and education of Mr Jonathan Wild the Great.

d

n

T

d

r.

ge

n |-

1,

0

١,

f

a

e

a

e vI.

I T is observable that nature seldom produces any one who is afterwards to act a notable part on the stage of life, but she gives some warning of her intention; and as the dramatic poet generally prepares the entry of every considerable character, with a solemn narrative, or at least a great flourish of drums and trumpets; so doth this our Alma Mater by some shrewd hints pre-admonish us of her intention, giving us warning as it were, and crying:

-Venienti occurrite morbo.

Thus Astyages, who was the grandfather of Cyrus, dreamt that his daughter was brought to bed of a vine whose branches overspread all Asia; and Hecuba, while big with Paris, dreamt that she was delivered of a firebrand that fet all Troy in flames; so did the mother of our Great Man, while she was with child of him, dream that she was enjoyed in the night by the gods Mercury and Priapus. This dream puzzled all the learned astrologers of her time, seeming to imply in it a contradiction; Mercury being the god of ingenuity, and Priapus the terror of those who practifed it. What made this dream the more wonderful, and perhaps the true cause of its being remembered, was a very extraordinary circumstance, sufficiently denoting fomething preternatural in it; for tho' she had never heard even the name of either of these gods, she repeated these very words in the morning, with only a small miltake of the quantity of the latter, which she chose to call Priapus instead of Priapus; and her husband'swore that though he might possibly have named Mercury to her (for he had heard of such a heathen god) he never in his life could have

have anywise put her in mind of the other deity, with

whom he had no acquaintance.

Another remarkable incident was, that during her whole pregnancy she constantly longed for every thing she saw; nor could be satisfied with her wish unless she enjoyed it clandestinely: and as nature, by true and accurate observers, is remarked to give us no appetites without furnishing us with the means of gratifying them; so had she at this time a most marvellous glutinous quality attending her singers, to which, as to birdlime, every thing closely adhered that she handled.

To omit other stories, some of which may be perhaps the growth of superstition, we proceed to the birth of our hero, who made his first appearance on this great theatre, the very day when the plague first broke out in 1665. Some say his mother was delivered of him in an house of an orbicular or round form in Covent-Garden; but of this we are not certain. He was some years afterwards baptized by the samous Mr Titus Oates.

Nothing very remarkable pass'd in his years of infancy, save, that as the letters Th are the most dissidult of pronunciation, and the last which a child attains to the utterance of, so they were the first that came with any readiness from young master Wild. Nor must we omit the early indications which he gave of the sweetness of his temper; for tho' he was by no means to be terrified into compliance, yet might he by a sugar-plum be brought to your purpose: indeed, to say the truth, he was to be brib'd to any thing, which made many say, he was certainly born to be a Great Man.

He was scarce settled at school before he gave marks of his lofty and aspiring temper; and was regarded by all his school-sellows with that deserence which men generally pay to those superior genius's who will exact it of them. If an orchard was to be robb'd, Wild was consulted, and tho' he was himself seldom concerned in the execution of the design, yet was he always concerter of it, and treasurer of the booty; some fittle part of which he would now and then, with wonderful

Ò

wonderful generosity, bestow on those who took it. He was generally very secret on these occasions; but if any offered to plunder of his own head, without acquainting Mr Wild, and making a deposit of the booty, he was sure to have an information against him lodged with the school-master, and to be severely

punished for his pains.

He discovered so little attention to school-learning, that his master, who was a very wife and worthy man, foon gave over all care and trouble on that account, and acquainting his parents that their fon proceeded extremely well in his studies, he permitted his pupil to follow his own inclinations; perceiving they led him to nobler pursuits than the sciences; which are generally acknowledged to be a very unprofitable study, and indeed greatly to hinder the advancement of men in the world. But though Mr Wild was not esteemed the readiest at making his exercise, he was universally allowed to be the most dextrous at stealing it of all his school-sellows; being never detected in such furtive compositions, nor indeed in any other exercitations of his great talents, which all inclined the same way, but once, when he had laid violent hands on a book called Gradus ad Parnassum, i. e. A step towards Parnassus; on which account his master, who was a man of most wonderful wit and sagacity, is said to have told him, he wished it might not prove in the event Gradus ad Patibulum, i. e. A step towards the gallows.

But though he would not give himself the pains requisite to acquire a competent sufficiency in the learned languages, yet did he readily listen with attention to others, especially when they translated the classical authors to him; nor was he in the least backward, at all such times, to express his approbation. He was wonderfully pleased with that passage in the eleventh Iliad, where Achilles is said to have bound two sons of Priam upon a mountain, and afterwards to have released them for a sum of money. This was, he said, alone sufficient to resute those who affected a contempt for the wisdom of the ancients, and an undeniable

tellimony

testimony of the great antiquity of * Priggism. He was ravished with the account which Nestor gives in the same book, of the rich booty which he bore off (i. e. stole) from the Eleans. He was desirous of having this often repeated to him, and, at the end of every repetition, he constantly fetched a deep sigh, and said, 'It was a glorious booty.'

When the story of Cacus was read to him out of the eighth Æneid, he generously pitied the unhappy fate of that great man, to whom he thought Hercules much too severe; one of his school-fellows commending the dexterity of drawing the oxen backward by their tails into his den, he smiled, and with some disdain, said, He could have taught him a better way.

He was a passionate admirer of heroes, particularly of Alexander the Great, between whom and the late king of Sweden he would frequently draw parallels. He was much delighted with the accounts of the Czar's retreat from the latter, who carried off the inhabitants of great cities to people his own country. 'This,' he said, 'was not once thought of by A-lexander; but,' added, 'perhaps he did not want them.'

Happy had it been for him, if he had confined himfelf to this sphere; but his chief, if not only blemish was, that he would sometimes, from an humility in his nature, too pernicious to true greatness, condescend to an intimacy with inferior things and persons. Thus the Spanish Rogue was his favourite book, and the Cheats

of Scapin his favourite play.

The young gentleman being now at the age of feventeen, his father, from a foolish prejudice to our universities, and out of a false, as well as excellive regard to his morals, brought his son to town, where he resided with him till he was of an age to travel. Whilst he was here, all imaginable care was taken of his instruction, his father endeavouring his utmost to inculcate principles of honour and gentility into his son.

h

t

h

h

d

[.] This word in the cant language fignifies thievery.

C H A P. IV.

Mr Wild's first entrance into the world. His acquaintance with Count La Ruse.

f

S

e

ts

Æ

1-

at

1-

th

is

to

ne

ts

e-

dhe

C-

te

N accident happened foon after his arrival in town, which almost faved the father his whole labour on this head, and provided Mr Wild a better tutor than any after care or expence could have furnished him with. The old gentleman, it feems, was a Follower of the fortunes of Mr Snap, son of Mr Geoffry Snap, whom we have before mentioned to have enjoyed a reputable office under the Sheriff of London and Middlefex, the daughter of which Geoffry had intermarried with the Wilds. Mr Snap the younger, being thereto well warranted, had laid violent hands on, or, as the vulgar express it, arrested one count La Ruse, a man of considerable figure in those days, and had confined him to his own house, till he could find two feconds who would in a formal manner give their words that the Count thould, at a certain day and place appointed, answer all that one Thomas Thimble a taylor had to fay to him; which Thomas Thimble, it feems, alledged that the Count had, according to the law of the realm, made over his body to him as a security for some suits of cloaths to him delivered by the faid Thomas Thimble. Now, as the Count, though perfectly a man of honour, could not immediately find these seconds, he was obliged for some time to refide at Mr Snap's house: for it feems the law of the land is, that whoever owes another 10 l. or indeed 2 l. may be, on the oath of that person, immediately taken up and carried away from his own house and family, and kept abroad till he is made to owe 50 l. whether he will or no; for which he is, perhaps, afterwards obliged to lie in goal; and all these without any trial had, or any other evidence of the debt than the abovefaid oath, which if untrue, as it often happens, you have no remedy against the perjurer; he was, forsooth! mistaken.

But though Mr Snap would not, (as perhaps by the nice rules of honour he was obliged), discharge the

Count

W G

N

C

q

Count on his parole; yet did he not, as by the strict rules of law he was enabled, confine him to his chamber. The Count had his liberty of the whole house, and Mr Snap using only the precaution of keeping his doors well locked and barred, took his prisoner's word

that he would not go forth.

Mr Snap had by his fecond lady two daughters, who were now in the bloom of their youth and beauty. These young ladies, like damsels in romance, compassionated the captive Count, and endeavoured by all means to make his confinement less irksome to him; which, though they were both very beautiful, they could not attain by any other way so effectually, as by engaging with him at cards, in which contentions, as will appear hereafter, the Count was greatly skilful.

As whilk and swabbers was the game then in the chief vogue, they were obliged to look for a fourth person, in order to make up their parties. Mr Snap himself would sometimes relax his mind from the violent fatigues of his employment, by these recreations; and sometimes a neighbouring young gentleman, or lady, came in to their affistance: but the most frequent guest was young Master Wild, who had been educated from his infancy with the Miss Snaps, and was, by all the neighbours, allotted for the hufband of Miss Tishy, or Lætitia, the younger of the two: for though, being his cousin german, she was, perhaps, in the eye of a strict conscience, somewhat too nearly related to him; yet the old people on both fides, though sufficiently scrupulous in nice matters, agreed to overlook this objection.

Men of great genius as easily discover one another as free masons can. It was therefore no wonder that the Count soon conceived an inclination to an intimacy with our young hero, whose vast abilities could not be concealed from one of the Count's discernment; for though this latter was so expert at his cards, that he was proverbially said to play the whole game, he was no match for Mr Wild, who, inexperienced as he was, notwithstanding all the art, the dexterity, and often the fortune of his adversary, never failed to

fend him away from the table with less in his pocket than he brought to it, for indeed Langfanger himself could not have extracted a purse with more ingenuity

than our young hero.

His hands made frequent visits to the Count's pocket before the latter had entertained any suspicion of him, imputing the feveral losses he fustained rather to the innocent and sprightly frolic of Miss Dolhy, or Theodofia, with which, as the indulged hin with little innocent freedoms about her person in return, he thought himself obliged to be contented; but one night, when Wild imagined the Count afleep, he made fo unguarded an attack upon him, that the other caught him in the fact: however he did not think proper to acquaint him with the discovery he had made; but preventing him from any booty at that time, he only took care for the future to button his pockets, and to pack the cards with double in-

duffry.

S,

y.

n-

all

1;

ey

as

ns,

il-

the

rth

nap

rio-

ns;

or

fre-

een

aps.

ruf-

the

was,

vhat

both

ters,

ther

that

inti-

ould

ern-

ards,

ame.

nced

rity,

ed to

fend

So far was this detection from causing any quarrel between these two Prigs *, that in reality it recommended them to each other: for a wife man, that is to fay a rogue, confiders a trick in life, as a gamester doth a trick at play. It sets him on his guard; but he admires the dexterity of him who plays it. These therefore, and many other such instances of ingenuity, operated fo violently on the Count, that notwithstanding the disparity which age, title, and, above all, drefs, had fet between them, he refolved to enter into an acquaintance with Wild. This foon produced a perfect intimacy, and that a friendship, which had a longer duration than is common to that passion between persons who only propose to themselves the common advantages of eating, drinking, whoring, or borrowing money; which ends as they soon fail, so doth the friendship founded upon them. Mutual interest, the greatest of all purposes, was the cement of this alliance, which nothing, of confequence, but superior interest was capable of dissolving. The work how as a may or accordance of the row have let on my anall abilities, as the pro-

Formon self out C H A P. V.

president own; my lather hards

A dialogue between young Master Wild and Count La Ruse, which having extended to the rejoinder, had a very quiet, easy and natural conclusion.

NE evening after the Miss Snaps were retired to rest, the Count thus addressed himself to young Wild: 'You cannot, I apprehend, Mr Wild be such a stranger to your own great capacity, as to be surprised when I tell you, I have often viewed, with a mixture of astonishment and concern, your shining qualities confined to a sphere, where they can never reach the eyes of those who would introduce them properly into the world, and raise you to an eminence, where you may blaze out to the admiration of all men. I assure you I am pleased with my captivity, when I reflect, I am likely to owe to it an acquaintance, and I hope friendship, with the greatest genius of my age; and what, is still more, when I indulge my vanity with a prospect of drawing from obscurity, pardon the expression, such talents, as were, I believe, never before · like to have been buried in it: for I make no question, but, at my discharge from confinement, which will now foon happen, I shall be able to introduce you into company, where you may reap · the advantage of your superior parts.

'I will bring you acquainted, Sir, with those, who as they are capable of setting a true value on such qualifications, so they will have it both in their power and inclination to prefer you for them. Such an introduction is the only advantage you want, without which your merit might be your missortune; for those abilities which would entitle you to honour and profit in a superior station, may render you only obnoxious to danger and disgrace in a

· lower.'

Mr Wild answered: 'Sir, I am not insensible of my obligations to you, as well for the over-value you have set on my small abilities, as for the kindness you express in offering to introduce me among

among my superiors. I must own, my father hath often persuaded me to push myself into the company of my betters; but, to fay the truth, I have an aukward pride in my nature, which is better pleafed with being at the head of the lowest class, than at the bottom of the highest. Permit me to say, tho' the idea may be somewhat coarse, I had rather stand on the summit of a dunghill, than at the bottom of a hill in paradife; I have always thought it fignifies little into what rank of life I am thrown, provided I make a great figure therein; and should be as well fatisfied with exerting my talents well at the head of a small party or gang, as in the command of a mighty army: for I am far from agree. ' ing with you, that great parts are often loft in a low situation; on the contrary, I am convinced it is impossible they should be lost. I have often per-' fuaded myself that there were not fewer than a thousand in Alexander's troops capable of perform. ing what Alexander himself did.

IS

11

0-

u

he

ed

to

p,

15

0-

ef-

re

ef-

nt,

in-

eap

ofe,

On

neir

uch

ant,

for-

Nou

en-

n a

ible

va-

the

me

ong

filver difh.

But because such spirits were not elected or destined to an imperial command, are we therefore to imagine they came off without a booty? or that they contented themselves with the share in common with their comrades? Surely, no. life, doubtless, the same genius, the same endowments have often composed the statesman and the ' prig: for so we call what the valgar name a Thief. The same parts, the same actions often promote men to the head of superior societies, which raise them to the head of lower; and where is the essential difference, if the one ends on Tower-hill, and the other at Tyburn? Hath the block any preference to the gallows, or the ax to the halter, but what was given them by the ill-guided judgment of men? You will pardon me therefore, if I am not fo haltily inflamed with the common outside of things, nor join the general opinion in preferring one state to another. A guinea is as valuable in a ' leathern as in an embroidered purse; and a cod's head is a cod's head still, whether in a pewter or a

The Count replied as follows: What you have now said doth not lessen my idea of your capacity; but confirms my opinion of the ill effects of bad and low company. Can any man doubt, whe her it is better to be a great states nan, or a common ' thief? I have often heard that the devil used to say, where, or to whom, I know not, that it was better ' to reign in Hell, then to be a valet de chambre in Heaven, and perhaps he was in the right; but sure · if he had had the choice of reigning in either, he would have chosen better. The truth therefore, is, that by low conversation we contract a greater awe for high things than they deserve. We decline s great pursuits not from contempt, but despair. The ' man who prefers the high road to a more reputable way of making his fortune, doth it because he ' imagines the one easier than the other: but you s yourself have afferted, and with undoubted truth, that the same abilities qualify you for undertaking, and the same means will bring you to your end in · both journeys; as in music, it is the same tune whether you play it in a higher or a lower key. · To instance in some particulars : Is it not the same · qualification which enables this man to hire himfelf as a servant, and to get into the confidence and fecrets of his master, in order to rob him, and that to undertake truffs of the highest nature with a design to break and betray them? Is it less difficult by false tokens to deceive a thop-keeper into the delivery of his goods, which you afterwards ' run away with, than to impose upon him by outward splendor, and the appearance of fortune, into a credit by which you gain, and he loses twenty times as much? Doth it not require more dexterity in the fingers to draw out a man's purse from his pocket, or to take a lady's watch from her fide, without being perceived of any, an excellence in which, without flattery, I am persuaded you have no superior, than to cog a die, or to shuffle a pack of cards? Is not as much art, as many excellent qualities, required to make a pimping porter at a common bawdy-house, as would enable a man

d

n

n

e

e

s,

re

e

e

le

ne

u

1,

in

ne

y.

ne

n.

ce

d

th

fi-

to

ds

it-

n-

ty

ity

nis

de,

in

ve

a

ex-

or-

a

an

man to prostitute his own or his friend's wife or · child? Doth it not alk as good a memory, as nimble an invention, as steady a countenance, to forswear vourself in Westminster-hall, as would furnish out a complete tool of state, or perhaps a statesman himfelf? It is needless to particularise every instance : in all we shall find, that there is a nearer connection between high and low life than is generally imae gined, and that a highwayman is entitled to more · favour with the great than he usually meets with. · If therefore, as I think I have proved, the same parts which qualify a man for eminence in a low sphere, qualify him likewise for eminence in a higher, sure tit can be no doubt in which he would chuse to exert. them. Ambition, without which no one can be a great man, will immediately instruct him, in your own phrase, to prefer a hill in paradise to a dung. bill; nay, even fear, a passion the most repugnant to e greatness, will shew him how much more safely he e may indulge himself in the full and free exertion of his mighty abilities in the higher, than in the lower ' rank: fince experience teaches him, that there is a crowd oftener in one year at Tyburn, than one · Tower hill in a century.' Mr Wild, with much folemnity, rejoined, ' That the same capacity which qualifies a Milken *, a Bridle-cull +, or a Buttock and File t, to arrive at any degree of eminence in his profession, would likewise raise a man in what ' the world esteem a more honourable calling, I donot deny; nay, in many of your instances it is evident, that more ingenuity, more art are necessary to the lower, than the higher proficients. If therefore you had only contended, that every prig might be a statesman if he pleased, I had readily agreed to it; but when you conclude, that it is his interest to be so, that ambition would bid him take that alternative, in a word, that a statesman is greater or happier than a Prig, I must deny my assent. But, in comparing these two together, we must carefully

^{*} A Housebreaker. † A Highwayman. ‡ A Shoplister. Terms used in the Cant Dictionary.

· avoid being missed by the vulgar erroneous estimation of things: for mankind err in disquisitions of this nature, as physicians do, who, in considering the operations of a disease, have not a due regard to the age and complection of the patient. The fame degree of heat, which is common in this confitution, may be a fever in that; in the same manner that which may be riches or honour to me, may · be poverty or disgrace to another: for all these things are to be estimated by relation to the person who possesses them. A booty of 10 l. looks as great in the eye of a Bridle cull, and gives as much real happiness to his fancy, as that of as many thousands to the liatefman; and doth not the former lay out · his acquitions in whores and fiddles, with much greater joy and mirth, than the latter in palaces and pictures? What are the flattery, the false compliments of his gang, to the statesman, when he s himself must condemn his own blunders, and is obliged against his will to give fortune the whole honour of his fuccess? what is the pride, resulting from fuch sham applause, compared to the seeret satisfaction which a Prig enjoys in his mind in · reflecting on a well-contrived and a well-executed fcheme? Perhaps indeed the greater danger is on the Prig's side; but then you must remember, that the greater honour is fo too. When I mention honour, I mean that which is paid them by their gang; for that weak part of the world, which is vulgarly called THE WISE, fee both in a difadvantageous and difgraceful light: And as the Prig enjoys, and merits too, the greater degree of honour from his gang, fo doth he suffer the less disgrace from the world, who think his misdeeds, as they call them, fufficiently at last punished with a halter, which at once puts an end to his pain and infamy; whereas the other is not only hated in power, but detelled and contemned at the scaffold; and future ages vent their malice on his fame, while the other fleeps quiet and forgotten. Besides, · let us a little consider the secret quiet of their consciences; how easy is the reflection of having taken

20

of

ng

to

he

n-

in-

ay

ele

on

eat

eal

nds

out

ich

and

m-

he

19

ole

ult-

fe-

d in

ited

on

hat

ho-

heir

h is

fad-

Prig

po-

dif-

, as

th a

and

d in

caf-

me,

des,

con-

ving

ken

without any breach of confidence, or perhaps any great harm to the person who loses it, compared to that of having betrayed a public trust, and ruined the fortunes of thousands, perhaps of a great nation? How much braver is an attack on the highway, than at a gaming-table; and how much more innocent the character of a b—y-house than a c—t pimp? He was eagerly proceeding, when casting his eyes on the Count, he perceived him to be fast asleep; wherefore having first picked his pocket of three shillings, then gently jogged him, in order to take his leave, and promised to return to him the next morning to breakfast, they separated; the Count retired to rest, and Mr Wild to a night-cellar.

C H A P. VI.

figred on howard unumbility in the lasterum cale

Further conferences between the Count and Master Wild, with other matters of the GREAT kind.

The Count missed his money the next morning, and very well knew who had it; but as he knew likewise how fruitless would be any complaint, he chose to pass it by without mentioning it. Indeed it may appear strange to some readers, that these gentlemen, who knew each other to be thieves, should never once give the least hint of this knowledge in all their discourse together; but, on the contrary, should have the words honesty, honour, and friendship, as often in their mouths as any other men. This, I say, may appear strange to some; but those who have lived long in cities, courts, gaols, or such places, will, perhaps, be able to solve the seeming absurdity.

When our two friends met the next morning, the Count (who, though he did not agree with the whole of his friend's doctrine, was, however, highly pleafed with his argument) began to bewail the misfortune of his captivity, and the backwardness of friends to assist each other in their necessities; but what vexed him, he said, most, was the cruelty of the fair: for he en-

trusted

trusted Wild with the secret of his having had an intrigue with Miss Theodosia, the elder of the Miss Snaps, ever fince his confinement, though he could not prevail with her to fet him at liberty. Wild anfwered with a fmile: 'It is no wonder a woman should wish to confine her lover, where she might be fure of having him entirely to herself; but added, he believed he could tell him a method of certainly e procuring his escape.' The Count eagerly befought him to acquaint him with it. Wild told him, bribery was the furest means, and advised him to apply to the maid. The Count thanked him, but returned, ' That he had not a farthing left besides one guinea, which he had then given her to change.' To which Wild said, ' He must make it up with pro-' mises, which he supposed he was courtier enough to know how to put off.' The Count greatly applauded the advice, and faid, he hoped he should be able in time to persuade him to condescend to be a great man, for which he was fo perfectly well qualified.

t

m

tl

to

m

to

ch

fu

hi

for

re

in

Wi

rea

vie

the

of

tro

free

and

nig

feer

the

did

and

but

He

This method being concluded on, the two friends fat down to cards, a circumstance which I should not have mentioned, but for the sake of observing the prodigious force of habit; for though the Count knew, if he won ever so much off Mr Wild, he should not receive a shilling, yet could he not refrain from packing the cards; nor could Wild keep his hands out of his friend's pockets, though he knew there was nothing in them.

When the maid came home, the Count began to put it to her; offered her all he had, and promifed mountains in futuro; but all in vain, the maid's honesty was impregnable. She said, 'She would not break her trust for the whole world; no not if she could gain a hundred pound by it.' Upon which Wild stepping up, and telling her: 'She need not fear losing her place, for it would never be found out; that they could throw a pair of sheets into the street, by which it might appear he got out at the window; that he himself would swear he saw him descending; that the money would be so much

gains in her pocket; that besides his promises, which the might depend on being performed, the would receive from him twenty shillings and ninepence in ready money (for she had only laid out three-pence in plain Spanish) and lastly, that besides his honour, the Count should leave a pair of gold buttons (which afterwards turned out to be brass) of great value in her hands, as a further pawn.

The maid still remained instexible, till Wild offered to lend his friend a guinea more, and to deposit it immediately in her hands. This reinforcement bore down the poor girl's resolution, and she taithfully promised

to open the door to the Count that evening.

Thus did our young hero not only lend his rhetoric, which few people care to do without a fee, but his money too, a sum which many a good man would have made fifty excuses before he would have parted with,

to his friend, and procured him his liberty.

4

t

eh tdeenh

But it would be highly derogatory from the GREAT character of Wild, should the reader imagine he lent such a sum to a friend without the least view of serving himself. As therefore the reader may easily account for it in a manner more advantageous to our hero's reputation, by concluding he had some interested view in the Count's enlargement, we hope he will judge with charity, especially as the sequel makes it not only reasonable, but necessary, to suppose he had some such view.

A long intimacy and friendship subsisted between the Count and Mr Wild, who being by the advice of the Count dressed in good cloaths, was by him introduced into the best company. They constantly frequented the assemblies, auctions, gaming-tables, and play-houses; at which last they saw two acts every night, and then retired without paying, this being, it seems, an immemorial privilege which the beaus of the town prescribe for to themselves. This, however, did not suit Wild's temper, who called it a cheat, and objected against it, as requiring no dexterity but what every blockhead might put in execution. He said it was a custom very much savouring of the Sneaking-

Sneaking-budge *, but neither so honourable nor so

ingenious.

Wild now made a confiderable figure, and passed for a gentleman of great fortune in the funds. Women of quality treated him with great familiarity, young ladies began to spread their charms for him; when an accident happened that put a stop to his continuance in a way of life too insipid and inactive to afford employment for those great talents, which were designed to make a much more considerable figure in the world, than attends the character of a beau or a pretty gentleman.

C H A P. VII.

Master Wild sets out on his travels, and returns home again. A very short chapter, containing infinitely more time and less matter than any other in the whole story.

W E are forry we cannot indulge our reader's curiosity with a full and perfect account of this accident; but as there are such various accounts, one of which only can be true, and possibly, and indeed probably, none; instead of following the general method of historians, who in such cases set down the various reports, and leave to your own conjecture which

you will chuse, we shall pass them all over.

Certain it is, that whatever this accident was, it determined our hero's father to fend his fon immediately abroad, for feven years; and, which may feem fomewhat remarkable, to his Majesty's plantations in America; that part of the world being, as he said, freer from vices than the courts and cities of Europe, and consequently less dangerous to corrupt a young man's morals. And as for the advantages, the old gentleman thought they were equal there with those attained in the politer climates; for travelling, he said, was travelling in one part of the world as well as another: it consisted in being such a time from home, and in traversing so many leagues; and appealed to experience, whether most of our tra-

* Shoplifting.

vellers

rel

tur

No

you

dea

mis

unc

but

blar

one

deed

mov

ness

olen

ture

pose

men

to o

Aron

ter r

year

men

a no

as t

mak

we f

imm

with

ter a

feven

An a

turne

likew

M

1

vellers in France and Italy did not prove at their return, that they might have been sent as profitably to

Norway and Greenland?

0

e

n

a

ne

ly

le

u.

his

ne

ed

ne-

va-

ich

it

ne-

nay

ta-

ng,

ties

or.

an.

ual

for

the

h a

es;

ra-

ers

According to these resolutions of his father, the young gentleman went aboard a ship, and with a great deal of good company set out for the American hemisphere. The exact time of his stay is somewhat uncertain; most probably longer than was intended a but howsoever long his abode there was, it must be a blank in this history: as the whole story contains not one adventure worthy the reader's notice; being, indeed, a continued scene of whoring, drinking, and removing from one place to another.

To confess a truth, we are so ashamed of the shortness of this chapter, that we would have done a violence to our history, and have inserted an adventure or two of some other traveller; to which purpose we borrowed the journals of several young gentlemen who have lately made the tour of Europe; but
to our great sorrow could not extract a single incident
strong enough to justify the thest to our conscience.

When we consider the ridiculous figure this chapter must make, being the history of no less than eight years, our only comfort is, that the histories of some mens lives, and perhaps of some men who have made a noise in the world, are in reality as absolute blanks as the travels of our hero. As, therefore, we shall make sufficient amends in the sequel for this inanity, we shall hasten on to matters of true importance, and immense greatness. At present we content ourselves with setting down our hero where we took him up, after acquainting our reader that he went abroad, staid seven years, and then came home again.

C H A P. VIII.

An adventure where Wild, in the division of the booty, exhibits an astonishing instance of Greatness.

THE Count was one night very successful at the hazard-table, where Wild, who was just returned from his travels, was then present; as was likewise a young gentleman whose name was Bob Bagshot,

Bagshot, an acquaintance of Mr Wild's, and of whom he entertained a great opinion; taking therefore Mr Bagshot aside, he advised him to provide himself (if he had them not about him) with a case of pistols, and to attack the Count, in his way home, promising to plant himself near with the same arms, as a corps de reserve, and to come up on occasion. This was accordingly executed, and the Count obliged to surrender to savage force what he had in so genteel and civil a manner taken at play.

And as it is a wife and philosophical observation, that one missortune never comes alone, the Count had hardly passed the examination of Mr Bagshot, when he fell into the hands of Mr Snap, who, in company with Mr Wild the elder, and one or two more gentlemen, being it seems thereto well warranted, laid hold of the unfortunate Count, and conveyed him back to the same house from which by the assistance of his

good friend he had formerly escaped.

Mr Wild and Mr Bagihot went together to the tavern, where Mr Bagihot (generously as he thought) offered to share the booty, and having divided the money into two unequal heaps, and added a golden shuff-box to the lesser heap, he desired Mr Wild to take

f t

· h

• 1

· b

n

· fe

· ly

f ti

Va

W

fe

ar

ot

knowa

his choice.

Mr Wild immediately conveyed the larger share of the ready into his pocket, according to an excellent maxim of his: 'First secure what share you can, before you wrangle for the rest:' and then, turning to his companion, he asked him, with a stern countenance, whether he intended to keep all that fum to himself? Mr Bagshot answered, with some surprize, that he thought Mr Wild had no reason to complain; for it was furely fair, at least on his part, to content himself with an equal share of the booty, who had taken the whole. 'I grant you took it,' replied Wild, 'but pray, who proposed or counselled ' the taking it? Can you fay that you have done more than executed my scheme? and might not I, if I had pleased, have employed another, since ' you well know there was not a gentleman in the room but would have taken the money, if he had

known how conveniently and fafely to do it? That is very true,' returned Bagshot, 'but did not I execute the scheme, did not I run the whole risque? Should not I have suffered the whole punishment if I had been taken, and is not the labourer worthy of his hire? Doubtless,' says Jonathan, 'he is so, and your hire I shall not refuse you, which is all that the labourer is entitled to, or ever enjoys. I remember when I was at school to have heard some verses, which for the excellence of their doctrine made an impression on me, purporting that the birds of the air, and the beafts of the field, work not for themselves. It is true, the farmer allows fodder to his oxen, and pasture to his sheep; but it is for his own service, not theirs. In the same manner the ploughman, the shepherd, the weaver, the builder, and the soldier, work not for themselves but others, they are contented with a poor pittance (the labourer's hire) and permit us the GREAT to enjoy the fruits of their labours. Aristotle, as my master told us, hath plainly proved, in the first book of his Politics, that the low, mean, useful part of mankind, are born slaves to the wills of their superiors, and are indeed as much their property as the cattle. It is well faid of us, the higher order of mortals, that we are born only to devour the fruits of the earth; and it may be as well faid of the lower class, that they are born only to produce them for us. Is not the battle gained by the sweat and danger of the common foldier? are not the honour and fruits of the victory the general's who laid the scheme? Is not the house built by the la-' bour of the carpenter and the bricklayer? Is it ' not built for the profit only of an architect, and for the use of the inhabitant, who could not easily have placed one brick upon another? Is not the cloth, or the filk, wrought into its form, and variegated with all the beauty of colours, by those who are forced to content themselves with the coarfest and vilest part of their work, while the profit and enjoyment of their labours fall to the share of others? Cast your eye abroad, and see who is it

de fe e,

is, on, ed

n,

ad en ny

aid ack his

the ht) the den

are cel-

ake

an, irntern fum

furto art,

oty, t it,' lled

one not ince

the had owa · lives in the most magnificent buildings, feasts his e palate with the most luxurious dainties, his eyes with the most beautiful sculptures and delicate e paintings, and clothes himself in the finest and richest apparel; and tell me if all these do not fall to his lot, who had not any the least share in producing all these conveniencies, nor the least ability fo to do? Why then should the state of a Prig* differ from all others? Or why should you, who are the labourer only, the executor of my scheme, expect a share in the profit? Be advised, therefore, deliver the whole booty to me, and trust to my · bounty for your reward.' Mr Bagshot was some time filent, and looked like a man thunder-struck: but at last recovering himself from his surprize, he thus began: 'If you think, Mr Wild, by the force of your arguments to get the money out of my pocket, you are greatly mistaken. What is all this · stuff to me? D-n me, I am a man of honour, and though I can't talk as well as you, by G-d you shall not make a fool of me; and if you take ' me for one, I must tell you, you are a rascal.' At which words, he laid his hand to his pistol. Wild perceiving the little success the great strength of his arguments had met with, and the hafty temper of his friend, gave over his design for the present, and told Bagshot, he was only in jest. But this coolness with which he treated the other's flame had rather the effect of oil than water. Bagshot replied, in a rage, 'D-n e me, I don't like such jests; I see you are a pitiful rascal, and a scoundrel.' Wild, with a philosophy worthy of great admiration, returned, ' As for your abuse, I have no regard to it; but to convince you, I am not afraid of you, let us lay the whole booty on the table, and let the conqueror take it all.' And having so said, he drew out his shining hanger, whose glittering so dazzled the eyes of Bagshot, that in a tone entirely altered, he said, 'No! he was contented with what he had already: ' that it was mighty ridiculous in them to quarrel among themselves; that they had common enemies

de

fic

in

W

OU

of

as

it.

hi

hi

hi

ag

to

W

fh

W

re

14

enough abroad, against whom they should unite their common force; that if he had mistaken Wild, he was forry for it; and as for a jest, he could take a jest as well as another.' Wild, who had a wonderful knack of discovering and applying to the passions of men, beginning now to have a little insight into his friend, and to conceive what arguments would make the quickest impression on him, cried out in a loud voice, 'That he had bullied him into drawing his hanger, and fince it was out, he would ' not put it up without satisfaction.' 'What satis-' faction would you have?' answered the other. ' Your money or your blood,' said Wild. 'Why 'lookye, Mr Wild,' said Bagshot, ' if you want to borrow a little of my part, fince I know you to be a man of honour, I don't care if I lend you: For though I am not afraid of any man living, ' yet rather than break with my friend, and as it may be necessary for your occasions.'- Wild, who often declared that he looked upon borrowing to be as good a way of taking as any, and as he called it, the genteelest kind of meaking-bidge, putting up his hanger and shaking his friend by the hand, told him, he had hit the nail on the head; it was really his present necessity only that prevailed with him against his will; for that his honour was concerned to pay a considerable sum the next morning. Upon which, contenting himself with one half of Bagshot's share, so that he had three parts in four of the whole, he took leave of his companion, and retired to reft.

is

is

ld

th

a

-n

ful

so-

for

n.

he

ror

his

yes

id,

y:

rel

ies

gh

C H A P. IX.

Wild pays a visit to Miss Letitia Snap. A description of that lovely young creature, and the successless issue of Mr Wild's addresses.

The next morning when our hero waked, he began to think of paying a visit to Miss Tishy Snap; a woman of great merit and of as great generosity, yet Mr Wild sound a present was ever most wel-

welcome to her, as being a token of respect in her lover. He therefore went directly to a toy-shop, and there purchased a genteel snuff-box, with which he waited upon his mistress; whom he found in the most beautiful undress. Her lovely hair hung wantonly over her forehead, being neither white with, nor yet free from powder; a neat double clout, which seemed to have been worn a few weeks only, was pinned under her chin; some remains of that art with which ladies improve nature, shone on her cheeks: her body was loosely attired, without stays or jumps; fo that her breasts had uncontrolled liberty to display their beauteous orbs, which they did as low as her girdle; a thin covering of a rumpled muslin handkerchief almost hid them from the eyes, save in a few parts where a good-natured hole gave opportunity to the naked breast to appear. Her gown was a sattin of a whitish colour, with about a dozen little filver spots upon it, so artificially interwoven at great distance, that they looked as if they had fallen there by chance. This flying open, discovered a fine yellow petticoat beautifully edged round the bottom with a narrow piece of half gold-lace, which was now almost become fringed; beneath this appeared another petticoat stiffened with whalebone, vulgarly called a hoop, which hung fix inches at least below the other; and under this again appeared an under garment of that colour which Ovid intends when he fays,

Qui color albus erat nunc est contrarius albo.

She likewise displayed two pretty seet covered with silk, and adorned with lace; and tied, the right with a handsome piece of blue ribband; the lest, as more unworthy, with a piece of yellow stuff, which seemed to have been a strip of her upper petticoat. Such was the lovely creature whom Mr Wild attended. She received him at first with some of that coldness which women of strict virtue by a commendable, though sometimes painful restraint, enjoin themselves to their lovers. The snuff-box being produced, was at first civilly, and indeed, gently resused: but on a second application accepted. The tea-table was some

0

13

T

1-

15

e

a

ts

e,

e.

at

W

e-

at

p,

d

at

th

ht

ft,

ch

it.

t-

at dnd, at

n

foon called for, at which a discourse passed between these young lovers, which, could we set it down with any accuracy, would be very edifying as well as entertaining to our reader; let it suffice then that the wit, together with the beauty of this young creature, so inflamed the passion of Wild, which, though an honourable fort of a passion, was at the same time fo extremely violent, that it transported him to freedoms too offensive to the nice chastity of Lætitia; who was, to confess the truth, more indebted to her own strength for the preservation of her virtue, than to the awful respect or backwardness of her lover: he was indeed fo very urgent in his addresses, that had he not with many oaths promised her marriage, we could scarce have been strictly justified in calling his passion honourable; but he was so remarkably attached to decency, that he never offered any violence to a young lady without the most earnest promises of that kind, these being, he said, a ceremonial due to female modesty, which cost so little, and were so easily pronounced, that the omission could arise from nothing but the mere wantonness of brutality. The lovely Lætitia, either out of prudence, or perhaps religion, of which she was a liberal professor, was deaf to all his promises, and luckily invincible by his force; for though the had not yet learnt the art of well clenching her fift, Nature had not however left her defenceless; for at the ends of her fingers she wore arms, which she used with such admirable dexterity, that the hot blood of Mr Wild soon began to appear in several little spots on his face, and his fullblown cheeks to refemble that part which modesty forbids a boy to turn up any where but in a public school, after some pedagogue, strong of arm, hath Wild now retreated exercised his talents thereon. from the conflict, and the victorious Lætitia, with becoming triumph and noble spirit, cried out, ' D-n your eyes, if this be your way of shewing your love, 'I'll warrant I gives you enough on't.' She then proceeded to talk of her virtue, which Wild bid her carry to the devil with her; and thus our lovers parted.

D 3

CHAP.

C H A P. X.

A discovery of some matters concerning the chaste Lætitia, which must wonderfully surprize, and perhaps affect our reader.

R Wild was no sooner departed, than the fair conqueress opening the door of a closet, called forth a young gentleman, whom the had there enclosed at the approach of the other. The name of this gallant was Tom Smirk. He was clerk to an attorney, and was indeed the greatest beau, and the greatest favourite of the ladies, at the end of the town where he lived. As we take dress to be the characteristic or efficient quality of a beau, we shall, instead of giving any character of this young gentleman, content ourselves with describing his dress only to our readers. He wore, then, a pair of white flockings on his legs, and pumps on his feet; his buckles were a large piece of Pinchbeck plate, which almost covered his whole foot. His breeches were of red plush, which hardly reached his knees; his waistcoat was a white demity, richly embroidered with yellow filk, over which he wore a blue plush coat with metal buttons, a smart sleeve, and a cape reaching half way down his back. His wig was of a brown colour, covering almost half his pate, on which was hung on one fide a little laced hat, but cocked with great smartness. Such was the accomplished Smirk, who, at his issuing forth from the closet, was received with open arms by the amiable Lætitia. She addressed him by the tender name of dear Tommy; and told him she had dismissed the odious creature whom her father intended for her husband, and had now nothing to interrupt her happiness with him.

Here, reader, thou must pardon us if we stop a while to lament the capriciousness of Nature in forming this charming part of the creation, designed to complete the happiness of man; with their soft innocence to allay his ferocity, with their sprightliness to soothe his cares, and with their constant friendship to relieve all the troubles and disappointments which

b

F

is

f

n

16

I

f

tl

e

b

tl

fi

h

h

to

d

a

W

th

tl

tl

S

tl

can happen to him. Seeing then that these are the bleffings chiefly fought after, and generally found in every wife, how must we lament that disposition in these lovely creatures, which leads them to prefer in their favour those individuals of the other sex, who do not seem intended by Nature as so great a master-piece. For furely, however useful they may be in the creation, as we are taught that nothing, not even a loufe, is made in vain; yet these beaus, even that most splendid and honoured part, which, in this our island, Nature loves to distinguish in red, are not, as some think, the noblest work of the Creator. For my own part, let any man chuse to himself two beaus; let them be captains or colonels, as well dreffed men as ever lived, I would venture to oppose a single Sir Isaac Newton, a Shakespear, a Milton, or perhaps fome few others, to both these beaus; nay, and I very much doubt, whether it had not been better for the world in general, that neither of these beaus had ever been born, than that it should have wanted the benefit arising to it from the labour of any one of those persons.

d

h

n

gle

1-

n

y

he

n-

n-

a

9-

to.

1-

p

11

If this be true, how melancholy must be the confideration, that any fingle beau, especially if he have but half a yard of ribbon in his hat, shall weigh heavier, in the scale of female affection, than twenty Sir Isaac Newtons! How must our reader, who perhaps had wifely accounted for the refistance which the chaste Lætitia had made to the violent addresses of the ravished (or rather ravishing) Wild, from that lady's impregnable virtue; how must he blush, I say, to perceive her quit the strictness of her carriage, and abandon herself to those loose freedoms which she indulged to Smirk! But, alas! when we discover all, as, to preserve the fidelity of our history, we must, when we relate that every familiarity had past between them, and that the FAIR Lætitia (for we must, in this fingle instance, imitate Virgil, where he drops the pius and the pater, and drop our favourite epithet of chaste) the FAIR Lætitia had, I say, made Smirk as happy as Wild desired to be, what must then be our reader's confusion? We will, therefore,

WHILL

draw a curtain over this scene, from that philogyny which is in us, and proceed to matters, which, instead of dishonouring the human species, will greatly raise and ennoble it.

C H A P. XI.

Containing as noble instances of human greatness as are to be met with in antient or modern history. Concluding with some wholesome hints to the gay part of mankind.

AFILD no sooner parted from the chaste Lætitia, than recollecting that his friend the Count was returned to his lodgings in the same house, he resolved to visit him: for he was none of those half-bred fellows, who are ashamed to see their friends when they have plundered and betrayed them: from which base and pitiful temper many monstrous cruelties have been transacted by men, who have sometimes carried their modesty so far as to the murder, or utter ruin of those against whom their consciences have suggested to them, that they have committed some small trespass, either by the debauching a friend's wife or daughter, belying or betraying the friend himself, or some other such trisling instance. In our hero there was nothing not truly great: he could, without the least abashment, drink a bottle with the man who knew he had the moment before picked his pocket; and, when he had stript him of every thing he had, never defired to do him any farther mischief; for he carried good nature to that wonderful and uncommon height, that he never did a fingle injury to man or woman, by which he himself did not expect to reap some advantage. He would often indeed fay, that by the contrary party men often made a bad bargain with the devil, and did his work for nothing.

h

W

ft

tl

di

ni

to

in

W

an

ge

int

Our hero found the captive Count, not basely lamenting his fate, nor abandoning himself to despair, but with due resignation, employing himself in preparing several packs of cards for future exploits. The Count, little suspecting that Wild had been the sole contriver of the misfortune which had befallen him, rose up, and eagerly embraced him; and Wild returned

d

fe

re

ng

id.

æ-

he

fe,

ose

ds

m

·u•

ne-

er,

ces

me

rife

elf,

ere

the

vho

et;

ver

ried

ght,

an,

ad-

the

vith

. . . .

la-

air,

ore-

The

fole

im,

re-

ned

turned his embrace with equal warmth. They were no fooner feated than Wild took an occasion, from feeing the cards lying on the table, to inveigh against gaming, and, with an usual and highly commendable freedom, after first exaggerating the distressed circumstances in which the Count was then involved, imputed all his misfortunes to that curfed itch of play, which, he faid, he concluded had brought his prefent confinement upon him, and must unavoidably end in his destruction. The other, with great alacrity, defended his favourite amusement (or rather employment), and having told his friend the great fuccess he had after his unluckily quitting the room, acquainted him with the accident which followed, and which the reader, as well as Mr Wild, hath had some intimation of before; adding, however, one circumstance not hitherto mentioned, viz that he had defended his money with the utmost bravery, and had dangeroully wounded at least two of the three men that had attacked him. This behaviour Wild, who not only knew the extreme readiness with which the booty had been delivered, but also the constant frigidity of the Count's courage, highly applauded, and wilhed he had been present to affift him. The Count then proceeded to animadvert on the carelessness of the watch, and the scandal it was to the laws, that honest people could not walk the streets in safety; and after expatiating some time on that subject, he asked Mr Wild if he ever saw so prodigious a run of luck (for fo he chose to call his winning, though he knew Wild was well acquainted with his having loaded dice in his pocket.) The other answered, it was indeed prodigious, and almost sufficient to justify any person, who did not know him better, in suspecting his fair play. 'No man, I believe, dares ' call that in question,' replied he. ' No surely,' says Wild, 'you'are well known to be a man of more ho-' nour: but pray, Sir,' continued be, ' did the rascals ' rob you of all?' 'Every fhilling,' cries the other, with an oath; 'they did not leave me a fingle stake.'

While they were thus discoursing, Mr Snap, with a gentleman, who followed him, introduced Mr Bagshot into the company. It seems Mr Bagshot, immediately

after

after his feparation from Mr Wild, returned to the gaming table, where, having trufted to Fortune that treasure which he had procured by his industry, the faithless goddess committed a breach of trust, and sent Mr Bogshot away with as empty pockets as are to be found in any laced coat in the kingdom. Now, as that gentleman was walking to a certain reputable house or shed in Covent-Garden market, he fortuned to meet with Mr Snap, who had just returned from conveying the Count to his lodgings, and was then walking to and fro before the gaming-house door : for you are to know, my good reader, if you have never been a man of wit and pleasure about town, that as the voracious pike lyeth fnug under some weed before the mouth of any of those little streams which discharge themselves into a large river, waiting for the fmall try which iffue thereout; fo hourly before the door or mouth of these gaming-houses doth Mr Snap, or fome other gentleman of his occupation, attend the issuing forth of the imall fry of young gentlemen, to whom they deliver little flips of parchment, containing invitations of the faid gentlemen to their houses, together with one Mr John Doe *, a perion whose company is in great request. Mr Snap, among many others of these billets, happened to have one directed to Mr Bagthot, being at the fuit or folicitation of one Mrs Anne Sample, Spinster, at whose house the said Bagihot had lodged feveral months, and whence he had inadvertently departed without taking a formal leave; on which account Mrs Anne had taken this method of speaking with him.

Mr Snap's house being now very full of good company, he was obliged to introduce Mr Bagshot into the Count's apartment, it being, as he said, the only chamber he had to lock up in. Mr Wild no sooner saw his friend than he ran eagerly to embrace him, and immediately presented him to the Count, who

received him with great civility.

ſ

h

n

T

q

iı

e

h

h

W

h

fit

C

fo

po

ed

This is a fictitious name which is put into every writ; for what purpose, the lawyers best know.

H A P.

Further particulars relating to Miss Tishy, which, perhaps, may not greatly surprise after the sormer. The description of a very fine gentleman. And a dialogue between Wild and the Count, in which public virtue is just hinted at, with, &c.

m

en

er

as

re

if-

he

the

ap,

the

to

in-

fes,

ose

any

Sted

one

faid

e he

rmal

this

om.

into

only

oner

him,

who

; for

R Snap had turned the key a very few minutes before a servant of the family called Mr Bagshot out of the room, telling him, there was a person below who defired to speak with him; and this was no other than Miss Lætitia Snap, whose admirer Mr Bagshot had long been, and in whose tender breast his passion had raised a more ardent slame than that of any of his rivals had been able to raise. Indeed she was so extremely fond of this youth, that she often confessed to her female confidents, if she could ever have listened to the thought of living with any one man, Mr Bagshot was he. Nor was she singular in this inclination, many other young ladies being her rivals in this lover, who had all the great and noble qualifications necessary to form a true gallant, and which nature is feldom fo extremely bountiful as to indulge to any one person. We will endeavour, however, to describe them all with as much exactness as possible. He was then fix feet high, had large calves, broad shoulders, a ruddy complexion, with brown curled hair, a modest assurance, and clean linen. He had indeed, it must be confessed, some small deficiencies to counterbalance these heroic qualities: for he was the filliest fellow in the world, could neither write nor read, nor had he a fingle grain or spark of honour, honesty, or good-nature in his whole compofition.

As foon as Mr Bagshot had quitted the room, the Count, taking Wild by the hand, told him he had fomething to communicate to him of very great importance: 'I am very well convinced,' said he, 'that Bagshot is the person who robbed me.' Wild started with great amazement at this discovery, and an**fwered**

aı

cli

hi

the

de

tw

Mi

ag

no

one

of i

COT

chi

the

mai

par

tato

In f

clud

into

bell

bab

thei

tirec

fwered with a most serious countenance, ' I advise you to take care how you cast any such reflections on a man of Mr Bagshot's nice honour; for I am certain he will not bear it.' D-n his honour,' quoth the enraged Count, ' nor can I bear being robbed; I will apply to a justice of peace.' Wild replied with great indignation, 'Since you dare entertain such a suspicion against my friend, I will henceforth disclaim all acquaintance with you. Mr Bagshot is a man of honour, and my friend, and consequently it is impossible he should be guilty of a bad action.' He added much more to the same purpose, which had not the expected weight with the Count; for the latter feemed still certain as to the person, and resolute in applying for justice, which, he faid, he thought he owed to the public, as well as to himself. Wild ithen changed his countenance into a kind of derision, and spoke as follows: Suppose it should be possible that Mr Bagshot had, in a frolic, (for I will call it no other) taken this method of borrowing your money, what will you get by profecuting him? Not your money again; for you hear he was stript at the gamingtable;' of which Bagshot had, during their short confabulation, informed them: ' you will get then an opportunity of being still more out of pocket by the profecution. Another advantage you may promise yourself is the being blown up at every gaming-house in town, for that I will assure you of; and then much good may it do you to fit down with the satisfaction of having discharged what it feems you owe to the public. I am ashamed of my own discernment, when I mistook you for a great Would it not be better for you to receive man. part, perhaps all, of your money again by a wife concealment; for however * feedy Mr Bagshot may be now, if he hath really played this frolic with you, you may believe he will play it with others, and when he is in cash, you may depend on a restoration; the law will be always in your power, · and

Poor.

and that is the last remedy which a brave or a wife man would refort to. Leave the affair therefore to me; I will examine Bagshot, and if I find he hath played you this trick, I will engage my own honour, you shall in the end be no loser.' The Count answered: 'If I was sure to be no loser, Mr Wild, · I apprehend you have a better opinion of my understanding than to imagine I would profecute a gentleman for the fake of the public. These are foolish words of course, which we learn a ridicu-' lous habit of speaking, and will often break from us without any defign or meaning. I assure you all I defire is a reimbursement, and if I can by your means obtain that, the public may-- concluding with a phrase too coarse to be inserted in a history of this kind.

They were now informed that dinner was ready, and the company assembled below stairs, whither the rea-

der may, if he please, attend these gentlemen.

There sat down at the table Mr Snap, and the two Miss Snaps, his daughters, Mr Wild the elder, Mr Wild the younger, the Count, Mr Bagshot, and a grave gentleman, who had formerly had the honour of carrying arms in a regiment of foot, and who was now engaged in the office (perhaps a more profitable one) of assisting or following Mr Snap in the execution

of the laws of his country.

d

e

ıt

e,

ot

n

III

ey

rt

en

et

ay

ry

Du

vn

it

ny

eat

ve

ise

ay

ith

rs,

er,

nd

Nothing very remarkable passed at dinner. The conversation (as is usual in polite company) rolled chiefly on what they were then eating, and what they had lately eaten. In this the military gentleman, who had served in Ireland, gave them a very particular account of a new manner of roasting potatoes, and others gave an account of other dishes. In short, an indifferent by stander would have concluded from their discourse, that they had all come into this world for no other purpose, than to fill their bellies; and indeed if this was not the chief, it is probable it was the most innocent design nature had in their formation.

As foon as the dish was removed, and the ladies retired, the Count proposed a game at hazard, which

F

Be

gy

thi

ha

off

up

pai

fca

wh

the

me

in t

tler

dre

and

imr

pan

ant

tim

whi

the

the

mai

refu

bloo

and

put

and

WOL

that

nou

perfe

logie

blish

was immediately affented to by the whole company, and the dice being immidiately brought in, the Count took up the box, and demanded who would fet him: to which no one made any answer, imagining perhaps the Count's pockets to be more empty than they were; for, in reality, that gentleman (notwithstanding what he had heartily swore to Mr Wild) had, fince his arrival at Mr Snap's, conveyed a piece of plate to pawn, by which means he had furnished himself with ten guineas. The Count; therefore, perceiving this backwardness in his friends, and probably somewhat guessing at the cause of it, took the said guineas out of his pocket, and threw them on the table; when lo! (fuch is the force of example) all the rest began to produce their funds, and immediately a confiderable fum glittering in their eyes, the game began.

C H A P. XIII.

A chapter, of which we are extremely vain, and which indeed we look on as our chef d'oeuvre, containing a wonderful story concerning the devil, and as nice a scene of honour as ever bappened.

Y reader, I believe, even if he be a gamester, would not thank me for an exact relation of every man's success; let it suffice then that they played till the whole money vanished from the table. Whether the devil himself carried it away, as some suspected, I will not determine; but very surprising it was, that every person protested he had lost, nor could any

one guess who, unless the devil-had won.

But though very probable it is, that this arch-fiend had fome share in the booty, it is likely he had not all; Mr Bagshot being imagined to be a considerable winner, notwithstanding his affertion to the contrary; for he was seen by several to convey money often into his pocket; and what is still a little stronger presumption is, that the grave gentleman, whom we have mentioned to have served his country in two honourable capacities, not being willing to trust alone to the evidence of his eyes, had frequently dived into the said Bagshot's

Bagshot's pocket, whence (as he tells us in the apology for his life afterwards published *) tho' he might extract a few pieces, he was very sensible he had lest

many behind.

of

e-

c-

ıs,

nd

ot

ole

y ;

to

p-

n-

le

id t's

The gentleman had long indulged his curiofity in this way before Mr Bagshot, in the heat of gaming, had perceived him: but as Bagshot was now leaving off play, he discovered this ingenious seat of dexterity; upon which, leaping up from his chair in a violent passion, he cried out, ' I thought I had been among gentlemen, and men of honour, but, d-n me, 'I find we have a pick-pocket in company.' The fcandalous found of this word extremely alarmed the whole board, nor did they show less surprise than the Conv -- n (whose not sitting of late is much lamented) would express at hearing there was an Atheist in the room: but it more particularly affected the gentleman at whom it was levelled, tho' it was not addressed to him. He likewise flarted from his chair, and with a fierce countenance and accent, faid, ' Do 'you mean me? D-n your eyes, you are a rascal ' and a scoundrel.' Those words would have been immediately fucceeded by blows, had not the company interposed, and with strong arm withheld the two antagonists from each other. It was however a long time before they could be prevailed on to fit down; which being at last happily brought about, Mr Wild the elder, who was a well disposed old man, advised them to thake hands and be friends; but the gentleman who had received the first affront, absolutely refused it, and swore, He would have the villain's blood. Mr Snap highly applauded the resolution, and affirmed that the affront was by no means to be put up by any who bore the name of a gentleman, and that unless his friend resented it properly, he would never execute another warrant in his company; that he had always looked on him as a man of honour, and doubted not but he would prove himself so:

Not in a book by itself, in imitation of some other such persons, but in the ordinary's account, &c. where all the apologies for the lives of rogues and whores which have been published within these twenty years, should have been inserted.

and that, if it was his own case, nothing should perfuade him to put up fuch an affront without proper fatisfaction. The Count likewise spoke on the same side, and the parties themselves muttered several short sentences, purporting their intentions. At last Mr Wild our hero, rising slowly from his feat, and having fixed the attention of all present, began as follows. 'I ' have heard with infinite pleasure every thing which the two gentlemen who spoke last have said with relation to honour, nor can any man possibly entertain a higher and nobler fense of that word, nor " a greater elteem of its ineltimable value, than myfelf. If we have no name to express it by in our " Cant Dictionary, it were well to be wifted we had. · It is indeed the effential quality of a gentleman, and which no man who ever was great in the field, or on the road (as others express it) can possibly be without. But alas! Gentlemen, what pity is it, that a word of such sovereign use and virtue should have fo uncertain and various an application, that fearce two people mean the fame thing by it? Do onot some by honour mean good-nature and humanity, which weak minds call virtues? How then! · Must we deny it to the great, the brave, the noble; · to the fackers of towns, the plunderers of provinces, and the conquerors of kingdoms? Were not these ' men of honour? and yet they scorned those pitiful qualities I have mentioned. Again, some few (or ' I am mistaken) include the idea of honesty in their honour. And thall we then fay, that no dian who witholds from another what law, or justice perhaps, calls his own, or who greatly and boldly deprieves him of such property, is a man of honour! · Heaven forbid I should say so in this, or, indeed, in any other good company. Is honour truth? No, it is not in the lie's going from us, but in its coming to us our honour is injured. Doth it then consist in what the vulgar call cardinal virtues? It would be an affront to your understandings to supof · pose it, since we see every day so many men of ver honour without any. In what then doth the word

honour consist? Why then itself alone. A man of

V

h

fi

of

pr

cl. Ba

fai

ga

fuc

fho

ren

of

and

fair

honour

r-

2-

le,

n-

ld

X-

ch

ith

n-

or

ny-

our

ad.

an,

eld,

be

it,

uld

hat

Do

ma-

en!

ble;

ces,

hele

tiful

(or

heir

who

per-

oldly

our!

deed,

uth?

in its

then

? It

fup-

en of

word

an of

nour

s honour is he that is called a man of honour; and while he is so called, he so remains, and no longer. · Think not any thing a man commits can forfeit, his honour. Look abroad into the world: the PRIG while he flourishes is a man of honour; when in goal, at the bar, or the tree, he is fo no longer. And why is this distinction? Not from his actions: for those are often as well known in his flourishing estate, as they are afterwards; but because men, I ' mean those of his own party, or gang, call him a man of honour in the former, and cease to call ' him so in the latter condition. Let us see then; how hath Mr Baghot injured the gentleman's honour? Why, he hath called him a pick-pocket; and that, ' probably, by a severe construction, and a long round-' about way of reasoning, may seem a little to dero-' gate from his honour, if confidered in a very nice ' fense. Admitting it, therefore, for argument's sake, ' to be some small imputation on his honour, let Mr Bagshot give him satisfaction; let him doubly and triply repair this oblique injury by directly afferting, that he believes he is a man of honour.' The gen tleman answered, he was content to refer it to Mr Wild, and whatever fatisfaction he thought sufficient, he would accept. Let him give me my money again first, said Bagshot, and then I will call him a man of honour with all my heart. The gentleman then protested he had not any, which Snap seconded, declaring he had his eyes on him all the while; but Bagshot remained still unsatisfied, till Wild, rapping out a hearty oath, swore he had not taken a single farthing, adding, that whoever afferted the contrary gave him the lie, and be would resent it. And now, fuch was the afcendancy of this Great Man, that Bagshot immediately acquiesced, and performed the ceremonies required: and thus, by the exquisite address of our hero, this quarrel, which had so fatal an aspect, and which between two persons so extremely jealous of their honour, would most certainly have produced very dreadful confequences, was happily concluded. MR Wild was indeed a little interested in this af-

Ma Wild was indeed a little interested in this affair, as he himself had set the gentleman to work, and E 3 had received the greatest part of the booty; and as to Mr Snap's deposition in his favour, it was the usual height to which the ardour of that worthy person's friendship too frequently hurried him. It was his constant maxim, that he was a pitiful fellow who would stick at a little * Rapping for his friend.

C H A P. XIV.

In which the history of GREATNESS is continued.

ATTERS being thus reconciled, and the gam-I ing over, from reasons before hinted, the company proceeded to drink about with the utmost chearfulnessand friendship; drinking healths, shaking hands, and professing the most perfect affection for each other. All which were not in the least interrupted by some defigns which they then agitated in their minds, and which they intended to execute as foon as the liquor had prevailed over some of their understandings; Bagshot and the gentleman intending to rob each other; Mr Snap and Mr Wild the elder, meditating what other creditors they could find out, to charge the gentlemen then in custody with: the Count hoping to renew the play; and Wild our hero laying a defign to put Bagihot out of the way, or, as the vulgar express it, to hang him with the first opportunity. But none of these great designs could at present be put in execution; for Mr Snap being foon after summoned abroad on business of great moment, which required likewise the assistance of Mr Wild the elder and his other friend, and as he did not care to trust to the nimbleness of the Count's heels, of which he had already had some experience, he declared he must lock up for that evening. Here, reader, if thou pleaselt, as we are in no great hafte, we will ftop and make a simile. As when their lap is finished, the cautious huntiman to their kennel gathers the nimble-footed hounds; they with lank ears and tails flouch fullenly on, whilst he with his whippers-in follows close to their heels, regardless of their dogged humour, till having feen them fafe within the door, he turns the key,

to

no

pi

to

as

fe

hi

H

on

no

on

ro

arı

of

rea

par

ın

the

fac

art

had

con

gen

tho

to

the

an

dim

^{*} Rapping is a cant name for perjury.

and then retires to whatever business or pleasure calls him thence: fo, with lowring countenance, and reluctant steps, mounted the Connt and Bagshot to their chamber, or rather kennel, whither they were attended by Snap, and those who followed him, and where Snap having feen them deposited, very contentedly locked the door and departed. And now, reader, we will, in imitation of the truly laudable custom of the world, leave these our good friends to deliver themselves as they can, and pursue the thriving fortunes of Wild our hero, who with that great aversion to satisfaction and content, which is inseparably incident to great minds, began to enlarge his views with his prosperity: for this restless amiable disposition, this noble avidity which increases with feeding, is the first principle or constituent quality of these our great men; to whom, in their passage on to greatness, it happens as to a traveller over the Alps, or, if this be a too farfetched simile, to one who travels westward over the hills near Bath, where the fimile was indeed made. He fees not the end of his journey at once; but passing on from scheme to scheme, and from hill to hill, with noble constancy, resolving still to attain the summit on which he hath fixed his eye, however dirty the roads may be through which he strougles, he at length. arrives at-fome vile inn, where he finds no kind of entertainment nor conveniency for repose. I fancy, reader, if thou haft ever travelled in these roads, one part of my simile is sufficiently apparent, (and indeed, in all these illustrations, one side is generally much more apparent than the other) but, believe me, if the other doth not so evidently appear to thy fatisfaction, it is from no other reason, than because thou art unacquainted with hese Great Men, and hast not had sufficient instruction, leisure, or opportunity to consider what happens to those who pursue what is generally understood by GREATNESS: for furely, if thou hadft animadverted not only on the many perils to which Great Men are daily liable while they are in their progress, but hadst discerned, as it were through a microscope (for it is invisible to the naked eye) that diminutive speck of happiness which they attain even in

d

r

at

n-

e-

to

ess

ne

X.

a.

ed

his

he

al-

ock

eft,

2

ous

red

aly

to

av-

ey,

nd

in the confummation of their wishes, thou wouldst lament with me the unhappy fate of these Great Men, on whom nature hath fet fo superior a mark, that the rest of mankind are born for their use and emolument only, and be apt to cry out, 'It is pity that THOSE, for whose pleasure and profit mankind are to labour and sweat, to be hacked and hewed, to be pil-· laged, plundered, and every way destroyed, should reap fo LITTLE advantage from all the miseries they occasion to others.' For my part, I own myfelf of that humble kind of mortals, who confider themselves born for the behoof of some great man or other, and could I behold his happiness carved out of the labour and ruin of a thousand such reptiles as myself, I might with satisfaction exclaim, Sic sic juvat: but when I behold one Great Man starving with hunger, and freezing with cold, in the midit of fifty thousand, who are suffering the same evils for his diversion; when I see another, whose own mind is a more abject flave to his own greatness, and is more tortured and racked by it than those of all his vassals: lastly, when I consider whole nations rooted out only to bring tears into the eyes of a Great Man, not indeed because he hath extirpated so many, but because he had no more nations to extirpate, then truly I am almost inclined to wish that nature had spared us this her MASTER-PIECE, and that no GREAT MAN had ever been born into the world.

But to proceed with our history, which will, we hope, produce much better lessons, and more instructive than any we can preach: Wild was no sooner retired to a night-cellar, than he began to reslect on the sweets he had that day enjoyed from the labours of others, viz. First, from Mr Bagshot, who had for his use robbed the Count; and, Secondly, from the gentleman, who for the same good purpose had picked the pocket of Bagshot. He then proceeded to reason thus with himself. 'The art of policy is the art of multiplication; the degrees of greatness being

constituted by those two little words More and Less.

· Mankind are first properly to be considered under · two grand divisions, those that use their own hands,

and

and those who employ the hands of others. The former are the base and rabble; the latter, the genteel part of the creation. The mercantile part of the world, therefore, wifely use the term employing bands, and juffly prefer each other, as they employ more or fewer; for thus one merchant fays he is greater than another, because he employs more hands. And now indeed the merchant should feem to challenge some character of greatness, did we not necessarily come to a second division, viz. Of those who employ hands for the use of the community in which they live, and of those who employ hands merely for their own use, without any regard to the benefit of fociety. Of the former fort are the yeoman, the manufacturer, the merchant, and, perhaps, the gentleman. The first of these being to manure and cultivate his native foil, and to employ hands to produce the fruits of the earth. The " fecond being to improve them by employing hands likewise, and to produce from them those useful commodities, which ferve as well for the coveniencies as necessaries of life. The third is to emof ploy hands for the exportation of the redundance. of our own commodities, and to exchange them with the redundances of foreign nations, that thus every foil and every climate may enjoy the fruits of the whole earth. The gentleman is, by employing hands likewise, to embellish his country with the improvement of arts and sciences, with the making and executing good and wholesome laws for the e preservation of property, and the distribution of justice, and in several other manners to be useful to fociety. Now we come to the fecond part of this division, viz. Of those who employ hands for their own use only: and this is that noble and great part who are generally distinguished into Conquerors, absolute Princes, Statesmen, and Prigs *. Now all these differ from each other in greatness only, as they employ more or fewer hands. And Alexander the Great was only greater than a Captain of one of the Tartarian or Arabian hords, as he was at the

d

r

T

it

IS

ic

g

is

a

re

s:

ly

n-

fe.

m

nis

ad

we

IC-

re-

he

of

his

en-

red

ea-

art

ing

ess.

der

ds,

and

^{*} Thieves.

head of a larger number. In what then is a fingle Prig inferior to any other great man, but because he employs his own hands only; for he is not on that account to be levelled with the base and vulgar,

16

T

in

ft:

CC

hi

hi

re

ed

pç

th

W

de

m

wi

th

fer

as

the

because he employs his hands for his own use only.
Now, suppose a Prig had as many tools as any

oprime minister ever had, would he not be as great

as any prime minister whatsoever? Undoubtedly he would. What then have I to do in the pur-

fuit of greatness, but to procure a gang, and to make the use of this gang center in myself. This

gang shall rob for me only, receiving very mode-

rate rewards for their actions; out of this gang I will prefer to my favour the boldest and most ini-

quitous, as the vulgar express it; the rest I will,

from time to time, as I see occasion, transport and

hang at my pleasure; and thus, which I take to

be the highest excellence of a Prig, convert those laws which are made for the benefit and protection

of fociety, to my fingle use.

Having thus pre-conceived his scheme, he saw nothing wanting to put it in immediate execution, but that which is indeed the beginning as well as the end of all human devices: I mean money. Of which commodity he was possessed of no more than fixty-five guineas, being all that remained from the double benefits he had made of Bagshot, and which did not feem sufficient to furnish his house, and every other convenience necessary for fo grand an undertaking. He refolved therefore to go immediately to the gaming-house, which was then fitting, not fo much with an intention of trusting to fortune, as to play the furer card of attacking the winner in his way home. On his arrival however, he thought he might as well try his fuccess at the dice, and referve the other resource as his last expedient. He accordingly fat down to play, and as Fortune, no more than others of her fex, is observed to distribute her favours with strict regard to great mental endowments, so our hero lost every farthing in his pocket. This loss, however, he bore with great constancy of mind, and with as great composure of aspect. To say truth, he considered the money as only lent

lent for a short time, or rather indeed as deposited with He then resolved to have immediate recourse to his surer stratagem; and casting his eyes round the room, he foon perceived a gentleman fitting in a disconsolate posture, who seemed a proper instrument or tool for his purpose. In short, to be as concise as possible in these least shining parts of our history, Wild accosted this man, founded him, found him fit to execute, proposed the matter, received a ready affent, and having fixed on the person who seemed that evening the greatest favourite of fortune, they posted themselves in the most proper place to surprise the enemy as he was retiring to his quarters, where he was foon attacked, fubdued and plundered; but indeed of no considerable booty: for it seems this gentleman played on a common stock, and had deposited his winnings at the scene of action; nor had he any more than two shillings in his pocket when he was attacked.

This was so cruel a disappointment to Wild, and so sensibly affects us, as no doubt it will the reader; that as it must disqualify us both from proceeding any farther at present, we will now take a little breath; and

yl. zw. atheatt in a which greening the tell

. High tight digits by the the tree well all attaches to the first that the

The state of the s

Like State I strand in the substrant from the confinence of

the second second and the second second

Albert Basseller Strategick of Section Ser Interest

The fact of the State of the St

in the second of the publicage of the area (at order).

able of fractions to abundant of borner which a

the state of the first of the state of the s

therefore we shall here close this book.

ſs

f

IS

d

at

g

of

y.

nt

THE

HISTORY

OFTHE

LIFE

OF THE LATE

Mr JONATHAN WILD, THE GREAT.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

fe

je

m

m

pr

as

di

to

the

fu

nai

Wa

not

fue

who

ficu

tile.

min

Characters of filly people, with the proper uses for which such are designed.

NE reason why we chose to end our first book, as -we did, with the last chapter was, that we are now obliged to produce two characters of a stamp entirely different from what we have hitherto dealt in. These persons are of that pitiful order of mortals, who are in contempt called good-natured; being indeed sent into the world by nature, with the same design with which men put little fish into a pikepond, in order to be devoured by that voracious water-hero.

But to proceed with our history: Wild having shared the booty in much the same manner as before, i. e. taken three fourths of it, amounting to eighteen pence, was now retiring to rest, in no very happy mood, when by accident he met a young fellow who had formerly been his companion, and indeed intimate friend at school. It hath been thought that friendship is usually nursed by similitude of manners; but the contrary

contrary had been the case between these lads: for whereas Wild was rapacious and intrepid, the other had always more regard for his skin than his money; Wild therefore had very generously compassionated this defect in his school-fellow, and had brought him off from many scrapes, into most of which he had first drawn him, by taking the fault and whipping to himself. He had always indeed been well paid on fuch occasions; but there are a fort of people, who, together with the best of the bargain, will be fure to have the obligation too on their fide; fo it had happened here: for this poor lad considered himself in the highest degree obliged to Mr Wild, and had contracted a very great efteem and friendthip for him; the traces of which an absence of many years had not in the least effaced in his mind. He no sooner knew Wild therefore, than he accosted him in the most friendly manner, and invited him home with him to breakfast, it being now near nine in the morning, which invitation our hero with no great difficulty confented to. This young man, who was about Wild's age, had some time before set up in the trade of a jeweller, in the materials or stock for which he had laid out the greatest part of a little fortune, and had married a very agreeable woman for love, by whom he then had two children. As our reader is to be more acquainted with this person, it may not be improper to open somewhat of his character, especially as it will ferve as a kind of foil to the noble and great disposition of our hero, and as the one seems sent into this world as a proper object on which the talents of the other feems to be displayed with a proper and just fuccess.

Mr Thomas Heartfree then, for that was his name, was of an honest and open disposition. He was of that fort of men, whom experience only, and not their own natures, must inform, that there are such things as deceit and hypocrify in the world; and who, consequently, are not at five and twenty as difficult to be imposed upon as the oldest and most subtile. He was possessed of several great weaknesses of mind; being good-natured, friendly and generous to

F

a great

e. taence, nood,

hich

ok,

we

of a

erto

r of

red;

the

pike-

wa-

ared

had mate

dship t the

trary

a great excess. He had indeed too little regard to common justice, for he had forgiven some debts to his acquaintance, only because they could not pay him; and had entrusted a bankrupt on his setting up a second time, from having been convinced, that he had dealt in his bankruptcy with a fair and honest heart; and that he had broke through misfortune only, and not from neglect or imposture. He was withal so filly a fellow, that he never took the least advantage of the ignorance of his customers, and contented himfelf with very moderate gains on his goods; which he was the better enabled to do, notwithstanding his generofity, because his life was extremely temperate, his expences being folely confined to the chearful entertainment of his friends at home, and now and then a moderate glass of wine, in which he indulged himfelf in the company of his wife, who, with an agreeable person, was a mean-spirited, poor, domestic, lowbred animal, who confined herfelf mostly to the care of her family; placed her happiness in her husband and her children; followed no expensive fashions or diversions: and indeed rarely went abroad, unless to return the visits of a few plain neighbours, and twice a year afforded herself, in company with her husband, the diversion of a play, where she never sat in a higher place than the pit.

To this filly woman did this filly fellow introduce the GREAT WILD, informing her at the same time of their school acquaintance, and the many obligations he had received from him. This simple woman no sooner heard her husband had been obliged to her guest, than her eyes sparkled on him with a benevolence, which is an emanation from the heart, and of which great and noble minds, whose hearts never fuell but with an injury, can have no very adequate idea; it is therefore no wonder that our hero should misconstrue, as he did, the poor, innocent, and simple affection of Mrs Heartfree towards her husband's friend, for that great and generous passion, which fires the eyes of a modern heroine, when the Colonel is so kind as to indulge his city creditor with partaking of his table to-day, and of his bed to-morrow.

Wild

b

tl

fi

th

hi

ha

d

on

en

an

we

rea

tim

the

abl

app

him

goo

wit,

felf

mer

fue

and

H

Wild therefore instantly returned the compliment, as he understood it, with his eyes, and presently after bestowed many encomiums on her beauty, with which perhaps she, who was a woman, though a good one, and misapprehended the design, was not displeased any more than the husband.

When breakfast was ended, and the wife retired to her houshold affairs, Wild, who had a quick discernment into the weaknesses of men, and who, befides the knowledge of his good (or foolish) disposition when a boy, had now discovered several sparks of goodness, friendship, and generosity in his friend, began to discourse over the accidents which had hap. pened in their childhood, and took frequent occafions of reminding him of those favours which we have before mentioned his having conferred on him; he then proceeded to the most vehement professions of friendship, and to the most ardent expressions of joy in this renewal of their acquaintance. He at last told him with great feeming pleafure, that he believed he had an opportunity of ferving him by the recommendation of a gentleman to his custom, who was then on the brink of marriage, and, if he be not already engaged, 'I will,' fays he 'endeavour to prevail on ' him to furnish his lady with jewels at your shop.'

1-

is

te,

n-

en

m-

ee-

W-

are

ind

or

to

vice

nd,

her

uce

ime

iga-

man

evo-

id of

ever

uate

ould

mple

and's

hich

lonel

rtak-

row.

Wild

Heartfree was not backward in thanks to our hero; and, after many earnest sollicitations to dinner, which

were refused, they parted for the first time.

But here, as it occurs to our memory, that our readers may be surprised (an accident which sometimes happens in histories of this kind) how Mr Wild the elder, in his present capacity, should have been able to maintain his son at a reputable school, as this appears to have been, it may be necessary to inform him, that Mr Wild himself was then a tradesman in good business; but, by missortunes in the world, to wit, extravagance and gaming, he had reduced himself to that honourable occupation which we have formerly mentioned.

Having cleared up this doubt, we will now purfue our hero, who forthwith repaired to the Count, and having first settled preliminary articles concern-

F 2

ing distributions, he acquainted him with the scheme which he had formed against Heartiree; and after consulting proper methods to put it in execution, they began to concert measures for the enlargement of the Count; on which the first, and indeed only point to be considered, was to raise money, not to pay his debts, for that would have required an immense sum, and was contrary to his inclination or intention, but to procure him bail; for as to his escape, Mr Snap had taken such precautions that it appeared absolutely impossible.

C H A P. II.

Great examples of Greatness in Wild, shewn as well by his behaviour to Bagshot, as in a scheme laid first to impose on Heartfree by means of the Count, and then to cheat the Count of the booty.

TILD undertook therefore to extract some mo-VV ney from Bagshot, who, notwithstanding the depredations made on him, had carried off a pretty confiderable booty from their engagement at dice the preceding day. He found Mr Bagshot in expectation of his bail, and, with a countenance full of concern, which he could at any time, with wonderful art, put on, told him, that all was discovered; that the Count knew him, and intended to profecute him for the robbery, had I not exerted (faid he) my utmost interest, and with great difficulty prevailed on him in case you refund the money -- ' Resund the ' money!' cried Bagthot, 'that is in your power: for ' you know what an inconsiderable part of it fell to ' my share.' ' How,' replied Wild, ' is this your gratitude to me for faving your life? for your own conscience must convince you of your guilt, and with how much certainty the gentleman can give evidence against you.' 'Mary come up,' quoth Bagshot, ' I believe my life alone will not be in · danger. I know those who are as guilty as myself. "Do you tell me of conscience?" --- 'Yes, sirrah!' answered our hero, taking him by the collar, ' and fince

h

V

0

tl

p

L

' fince you dare threaten me, I will shew you the difference between committing a robbery, and con-' niving at it, which is all I can charge myself with. 'I own indeed I suspected when you shewed me a fum of money, that you had not come honeitly by 'it.' 'How,' says Bagshot, frighted out of one half of his wits, and amazed out of the other, ' can you deny?'- 'Yes, you rascal,' answered Wild, 'I do deny every thing, and do you find a witness to prove it; and, to shew you how little apprehensions I have of your power to hurt me, I will have you appre-' hended this moment.'-At which words he offered to break from him; but Bagshot laid hold of his skirts, and, with an altered tone and manner, begged him not to be so impatient. ' Refund then, firrah,' cries Wild, ' and perhaps I may take pity on you.' What must I refund?' answered Bagshot. ' Every ' farthing in your pocket,' replied Wild; ' then I may have fome compassion on you, and not only fave 'your life, but, out of an excess of generosity, may ' return you something.' At which words Bagthor sceming to hesitate, Wild pretended to make to the door, and rapt out an oath of vengeance with fo violent an emphasis, that his friend no longer presumed to balance, but suffered Wild to fearch his pockets, and draw forth all he found, to the amount of twenty one guineas and a half, which last piece our generous hero returned him again; telling him, he might now fleep secure, but advised him for the future never to threaten his friends.

Thus did our hero execute the greatest exploits with the utmost ease imaginable, by means of those transcendent qualities which nature had indulged him with, viz. a bold heart, a thundering voice, and a

steady countenance.

e

0

is

n,

ut

q

ly

by

ben

no-

the

etty

the

eta-

on-

rful

that

him

ut-

on

the

for

ll to

gra-

own

and

can

uoth

e in

y felf.

rah!

and

fince

Wild now returned to the Count, and informed him that he had got ten guineas of Balhot; for, with great and commendable prudence, he funk the other eleven into his own pocket; and told him with that money he would procure him bail, which he after prevailed on his father, and another gentleman of the time occupation, to become, for two grineas each; L

So that he made lawful prize of fix more, making Bagshot debtor for the whole ten; for such were his great abilities, and so vast the compass of his understanding, that he never made any bargain without over-reaching (or, in the vulgar phrase, cheating) the

person with whom he dealt.

The Count being, by these means, enlarged, the first thing they did, in order to procure credit from tradesmen, was the taking a handsome house ready furnished, in one of the new streets; in which, as soon as the Count was fettled, they proceeded to furnish him with servants and equipage, and all the Insignia of a large estate proper to impose on poor Heartfree. These being all obtained, Wild made a second visit to his friend, and, with much joy in his countenance, acquainted him that he had succeeded in his endeavours, and that the gentleman had promifed to deal with him for the jewels which he intended to present his bride, and which were defigned to be very splendid and coffly; he therefore appointed him to go to the Count the next morning, and carry with him a fet of the richest and most beautiful jewels he had, giving him at the same time some hints of the Count's ignorance of that commodity, and that he might extort what price of him he pleased; but Heartfree told him, not without some disdain, that he scorned to take any fuch advantage; and, after expressing much gratitude to his friend for his recommendation, he promised to carry the jewels at the hour, and to the place appointed.

I am fensible that the reader, if he hath but the least notion of greatness, must have such a contempt for the extreme soily of this fellow, that he will be very little concerned at any misfortunes which may befal him in the seques: for, to have no suspicion, that an old school-fellow, with whom he had, in his tenderest years, contracted a friendship, and who, on the accidental renewing of their acquaintance, had professed the most passionate regard for him, should be very ready to impose on him; in short, to conceive that a friend should, of his own accord, without any view to his own interest, endeavour to do him a fer-

vice;

th

OI

m

fu

W

lat

ve

an

lia

ed

of

fev

ing

fuc

vice; must argue such weakness of mind, such ignorance of the world, and such an artless, simple, undesigning heart, as must render the person possessed of it the lowest creature, and the properest object of contempt imaginable, in the eyes of every man of un-

derstanding and discernment. Wild remembered that his friend Heartfree's faults were rather in his heart than in his head; that though he was so mean a fellow, that he was never capable of laying a design to injure any human creature yet was he by no means a tool, or liable to any gross imposition, unless where his heart betrayed him. He therefore instructed the Count to take only one of his jewels at the first interview, and to reject the rest as not fine enough, and order him to provide some richer. He said, this management would prevent Heartfree from expecting ready money for the jewel he brought with him, which the Count was presently to dispose of, and by means of that money, and his great abilities at cards and dice, to get together as large a sum as possible, which he was to pay down to Heartfree, at the delivery of the fet of jewels, who would be thus void of all manner of suspicion, and would not fail to give him credit for the relidue.

t

i

ıt

d

ne

of

g

0-

rt

n,

ny

de

to

p-

he

pt

be

ay

on,

his

on

ro-

be

ive

iny

er-

ce;

By this contrivance it will appear in the sequel, that Wild did not only propose to make the imposition on Heartsree, who was (hitherto) void of all suspicion, more certain; but to rob the Count himself of this sum. This double method of cheating the very tools who are our instruments to cheat others, is the superlative degree of greatness, and is probably, as far as any spirit crusted over with clay can carry it, falling very little short of Diabolism itself.

This method was immediately put in execution, and the Count, the first day, took only a single brilliant worth about three hundred pounds, and ordered a necklace, ear rings, and solitaire, of the value of three thousand more, to be prepared by that day seven-night.

This interval was employed by Wild in profecuting his scheme of raising a gang, in which he met with such success, that within a few days he had levied se-

veral

veral bold and resolute sellows fit for any enterprize

how dangerous and great foever.

We have before remarked, that the truest mark of greateness is insatiability. Wild had covenanted with the Count to receive three-fourths of the booty, and had at the same time, covenanted with himself, to secure the other fourth part likewise, for which he had formed a very great and noble design; but now saw with concern, that sum, which was to be received in hand by Heartsree, in danger of being absolutely lost. In order, therefore, to possess himself of that likewise, he contrived that the jewels should be brought in the asternoon, and that Heartsree should be detained before the Count could see him; so that the night should overtake him in his return, when two of his gang were ordered to attack and plunder him.

C H A P. III.

Containing scenes of softness, love and honour, all in the great stile.

HE Count had disposed of his jewel for its full value, and this he had, by dexterity, raised to a thousand pounds; this sum therefore he paid down to Heartfree, promising him the rest within a month. His house, his equipage, his appearance, but, above all, a certain plausibility in his voice and behaviour would have deceived any, but one whose great and wife heart had dictated to him fomething within, which would have fecured him from any danger of impolition from without. Heartfree therefore did not in the least scruple giving him credit; but as he had in reality procured those jewels of another, his own little stock not being able to furnish any thing so valuable, he begged the Count would be fo kind to give his note for the money, payable at the time he mentioned; which that gentleman did not in the least scruple: fo he paid him the thousand pound, in specie, and gave his note for two thousand eight hundred pounds more to Heartfree, who burns with gratitude to Wild, for the noble customer he had recommended to him.

As

h

tl

cl

in

W

de

M

B

hi

ed

an

ne

ze

of

th

id

to

he

W

ed

ely

nat

ht

n.

ght

his

the

full

o a

n to

nth.

ove

our

and

nich

tion

the

re-

ittle

able,

e his

tion-

ple:

and

unds

e to

nded

As

the

As soon as Heartfree was departed, Wild, who waited in another room, came in, and received the casket from the Count; it having been agreed between them, that this should be deposited in his hands, as he was the original contriver of the scheme, and was to have the largest share. Wild having received the casket, offered to meet the Count late that evening to come to a division; but such was the latter's confidence in the honour of our hero, that, he faid, if it was any inconvenience to him, the next morning would do altogether as well. This was more agreeable to Wild, and accordingly an appointment being made for that purpose, he set out in haste to pursue Heartfree to the place where the two gentlemen were ordered to meet and attack him. Those gentlemen, with noble resolution, executed their purpose; they attacked and spoiled the enemy of the whole sum he had received from the Count.

As foon as the engagement was over, and Heartfree left sprawling on the ground, our hero, who wisely declined trusting the booty in his friends hands, tho' he had good experience of their honour, made off after the conquerors: at length they being all at a place of safety, Wild, according to a previous agreement, received nine tenths of the booty; the subordinate heroes did indeed profess some little unwillingness (perhaps more than was strictly consistent with honour) to perform their contract; but Wild, partly by argument, but more by oaths and threatnings, prevailed with them to sulfil their promise.

Our hero having thus, with wonderful address, brought this great and glorious action to a happy conclusion, resolved to relax his mind after his fatigue, in the conversation of the fair. He therefore set forwards to his lovely Lætitia: but, in his way, accidentally met with a young lady of his acquaintance, Miss Molly Straddle, who was taking the air in Bridges-street. Miss Molly seeing Mr Wild, stopped him, and with a familiarity peculiar to a genteel town education, tapp'd or rather slapp'd him on the back, and asked him to treat her with a pint of wine, at a neighbouring tavern. The hero, though he loved

the chaste Lætitia with excessive tenderness, was not of that low sniveling breed of mortals, who, as it is generally expressed, the themselves to a woman's apronsirings; in a word, who are tainted with that mean, base, low vice, or virtue as it is called, of constancy; therefore he immediately consented, and attended her to a tavern famous for excellent wine, known by the name of the Rummer and Horseshoe, where they retired to a room by themselves. Wild was very vehement in his addresses, but to no purpose; the young lady declared she would grant no favour till he had made her a present; this was immediately complied with, and the lover made as happy as he could desire.

The immoderate fondness which Wild entertained for his dear Lætitia, would not suffer him to waste any considerable time with Miss Straddle. Notwithstanding, therefore, all the endearments and caresses of that young lady, he soon made an excuse to go down stairs, and thence immediately set forward to Lætitia, without taking any formal leave of Miss Straddle, or indeed of the drawer, with whom the lady was afterwards obliged to come to an account for the reckonwards obliged to come to an account for the reckonwards obliged to

ing.

Mr Wild, on his arrival at Mr Snap's, found only Miss Doshy at home; that young lady being employed alone, in imitation of Penelope, with her thread or worsted; only with this difference, that whereas Penelope unravelled by night what she had knit, or wove, or spun by day, so what our young heroine unravelled by day, she knit again by night. In short, she was mending a pair of blue stockings with red clocks: a circumstance which, perhaps, we might have omitted, had it not served to shew that there are still some ladies of this age, who imitate the simplicity of the ancients.

Wild immediately asked for his beloved, and was informed, that she was not at home. He then enquired where she was to be found, and declared, he would not depart till he had seen her; nay, not till he had married her; for, indeed, his passion for her was truly honourable; in other words, he had so ungovernable a desire for her person, that he would go

any

f

f

to

ti

le

fo

Q

th

pr

th

fer

fia

he

ba

He

the

de

ma

IS a

the

fmi

his

any lengths to fatisfy it. He then pulled out the casket, which he swore was full of the finest jewels, and that he would give them all to her, with other promises; which so prevailed on Miss Doshy, who had not the common failure of fitters in envying, and often endeavouring to disappoint each other's happiness, that she defired Mr Wild to sit down a few minutes, whilft she endeavoured to find her sister, and to bring her to him. The lover thanked her, and promised to stay till her return; and Miss Doihy, leaving Mr Wild to his meditations, fastened him in the kitchen by barring the door (for most of the doors in this mansion were made to be bolted on the outfide) and then flapping to the door of the house with great violence, without going out at it, the stole foftly up stairs, where Miss Lætitia was engaged in close conference with Mr Bagshot. Miss Letty, being informed by her fifter in a whifper of what Mr Wild had faid, and what he had produced, told Mr Bagthot, that a young lady was below to vifit her, whom the would dispatch with all imaginable haste, and return to him. She defired him therefore to stay with patience for her in the mean time, and that she would leave the door unlocked, tho' her papa would never forgive her if he thould discover it. Bagshot promited on his honour, not to step without his chamber; and the two young ladies went foftly down stairs; when pretending first to make their entry into the house, they repaired to the kitchen, where not even the prefence of the chaste Lætitia could restore that harmony to the countenance of her lover, which Miss Theodosia had left him possessed of; for, during her absence, he had discovered the absence of a purse containing bank notes for 900 1. which had been taken from Mr Heartfree, and which indeed, Miss Straddle had, in the warmth of his amorous caresses, unperceived drawn from him. However, as he had that perfect, mastery of his temper, or rather of his muscles, which is as necessary to the forming a great character, as to the personating it on the stage, he soon conveyed a smile into his countenance, and concealing as well his misfortune as his chagrin at it, began to pay honourable

d

b

14

d.

at

rs,

h-

n-

er-

n-

nly

oy-

or

Pe-

ve,

vel-

the

ks:

nit-

ome

the

was

en-

, he

till

her

un-

l go

any

nourable addresses to Miss Letty. This young lady, among many other good ingredients, had three very predominant passions, to wit, vanity, wantonness, and avarice. To fatisfy the first of these, she employed Mr Smirk and company; to the fecond, Mr Bagthot and company; and our hero had the honour and happiness of solely engrossing the third. Now, these three forts of lovers the had very different ways of entertaining. With the first, she was all gay and coquette; with the second, all fond and rampant; and with the. last, all cold and reserved. She therefore, told Mr Wild, with a most composed aspect, that she was glad he had repented of his manner of treating her at their last interview, where his behaviour was so monstrous, that she had resolved never to see him any more; that the was afraid her own fex would hardly pardon her the weakness she was guilty of in receding from that resolution, which she was persuaded she never should have brought herself to, had not her sister, who was there to confirm what the faid (as the did with many oaths) betrayed her into his company, by pretending it was another person to visit her: but however, as he now thought proper to give her more convincing proofs of his affections (for he had now the casket in his hand) and since she perceived his designs were no longer against her virtue, but were such as a woman of honour might listen to, she must own-and then the feign'd an hesitation, when Theodosia began: · Nay, filter, I am refolved you thall counterfeit no Ionger. I affure you, Mr Wild, the hath the most ' violent pattion for you in the world; and indeed, dear Tilhy, if you offer to go back, fince I plain-' ly see Mr Wild's designs are honourable, I will betray all you have ever faid.'- How, fifter,' anfwered Lætitia, 'I protest you will drive me out of the room: I did not expect this usage from you. Wild then fell on his knees, and taking hold of her hand, repeated a speech which as the reader may eafily suggest to himself, I shall not here set down. He then offered her the casket, but she gently rejected it; and on a fecond offer, with a modelt countenance and voice, defired to know what it contained.

tı

e

in

lit

yo

m

T

fre

im

file

fha

OV

and

the

fwe

upi

flex

pec

d

b

ot

ee

r-

e;

he.

Mr

as

at

n-

re;

OR

om

ver

ho

ith

re-

·WC

on-

the

gns

as a

and

an:

no

most

eed,

ain-

will

an-

it of

you.'

her

may

own.

eject-

unte-

ined.

Wild

Wild then opened it, and took forth (with forrow I write it, and with forrow will it be read) one of those beautiful necklaces, with which at the fair of Bartholomew, they deck the well bewhitened neck of Thalestris queen of Amazons, Anna Bullen, queen Elizabeth, or some other high princess in Drollic story. It was indeed composed of that paste, which Derdæus Magnus, an ingenious toyman, doth at a very moderate price dispense to the second rate-beaus of the metropolis. For, to open a truth, which we ask our reader's pardon for having concealed from him fo long; the fagacious Count, wifely fearing lest some accident might prevent Mr Wild's return at the appointed time, had carefully conveyed the jewels which Mr Heartfree had brought with him, into his own pocket; and in their flead had placed in the casket these artificial stones, which, tho' of equal value to a philosopher, and perhaps of a much greater to a true admirer of the compositions of art, had not however the same charms in the eyes of Miss Letty; who had indeed some knowledge of jewels: for Mr Snap, with great reason considering how valuable a part of a lady's education it would be to be well instructed in these things in an age when young ladies learn little more than how to drefs themselves, had in her youth placed Miss Letty as the hand-maid (or housemaid as the vulgar call it) of an eminent pawn-broker. The lightning, therefore, which should have flashed from the jewels, flashed from her eyes, and thunder immediately followed from her voice. She be-knaved, be-rascalled, be-rogued the unhappy hero, who stood filent, confounded with astonishment, but more with shame and indignation, at being thus out-witted and over-reached. At length he recovered his spirits, and throwing down the casket in a rage, he snatched the key from the table; and without making any anfwer to the ladies, who both very plentifully opened upon him, and without taking any leave of them, he flew out at the door, and repaired with the utmost expedition to the Count's habitation. CHAP.

C H A P. IV.

In which Wild, after many fruitless endeavours to discover his friend, moralizes on his missortunes, in a speech, which may be of use (if rightly understood) to some other considerable speech makers.

woman of quality knocks with more impetuofity, than Wild did at the Count's door, which was immediately opened by a well-dress'd livery man, who answered that his master was not at home. Wild, not fatisfied with this, searched the house, but to no purpose; he then ransacked all the gaming houses in town, but found no Count; indeed that gentleman had taken leave of his house the same instant Mr Wild had turned his back, and, equipping himself with boots and a post-horse, without taking with him either servant, clothes, or any necessaries, for the journey of a great man, made such mighty expedition that he was now upwards of twenty miles on his way to Dover.

Wild finding his search ineffectual, resolved to give it over for that night; he then retired to his seat of contemplation, a night-cellar, where, without a single farthing in his pocket, he called for a sneaker of punch, and placing himself on a bench by himself he softly vented the following soliloguy:

· How vain is human GREATNESS! What avail · superior abilities, and a noble defiance of those

narrow rules and bounds which confine the vulgar; when our best-concerted schemes are liable to be

deseated! How unhappy is the state of PRIGGISM!

· 1

. 0

1

f

· How impossible for human prudence to foresee and · guard against every circumvention! It is even as a

game of Chefs, where, while the rook, or knight,

or bishop, is busied in sorecasting some great enterprize, a worthless pawn interposes, and disconcerts

his scheme. Better had it been for me to have ob-

· ferved the simple laws of friendship and morality,

than thus to ruin my friend, for the benefit of others: I might have commanded his purse to any degree of moderation: I have now disabled him from the power of ferving me. Well! but that was not my defign. If I cannot arraign my own conduct, why should I, like a woman or a child, sit down and lament the disappointment of chance? But can I acquit myself of all neglect? Did I not misbehave in putting it in the power of others to outwit me? But that is impossible to be avoided. In this a Prig is more unhappy than any other: a cautious man may, in a croud, preferve his own pockets by keeping his hands in them; but while the Prig employs his hands in another's pocket, how thall he be able to defend his own! Indeed in this light what can be imagined more miserable than a Prig? How dangerous are his acquificions! how unfafe, how unquiet his possessions! why then should any man with to be a Prig, or where is his greatness? I answer, in his mind: 'tis the inward glory, the fecret consciousness of doing great and wonderful 'actions, which can alone support the truly GREAT ' Man, whether he be a Conqueror, a TYRANT, 'a STATESMAN, or a PRIG. These must bear him up against the private curse and public imprecation, and while he is hated and deteited by all man-' kind, must make him inwardly satisfied with him-' self. For what but some such inward satisfaction 'as this could inspire men possessed of power, of wealth, of every human bleffing, which pride, avarice, or luxury could desire, to forsake their homes, abandon ease and repose, and at the expence of 'riches and pleasures, at the price of labour and hardship, and at the hazard of all that fortune hath liberally given them, could fend them at the head of a multitude of Prigs called an army, to molest ' their neighbours; to introduce rape, rapine, blood-' shed, and every kind of misery among their own species? What but some such glorious appetite of mind could inflame princes, endowed with the greatest honours, and enriched with the most plentiful revenues, to defire maliciously to rob those G 2 · fubjects

d i-

as

ot rin

an ild ith im

icn

to feat t a ker

felf

hose gar; be sm!

and as a ght, ater-

oblity,

- 1000

· subjects of their liberties, who are content to sweat · for their luxury, and to bow down their knees to the · pride of those very princes? What but this can in-' spire them to destroy one half of their subjects, in order to reduce the rest to an absolute dependence on their own wills, and on those of their brutal sucs ceffors? What other motive could feduce a subject, · possessed of great property in his community, to betray the interest of his fellow-subjects, of his brethren, and his posterity, to the wanton disposition of fuch princes? Lastly, what less inducement could e persuade the Prig to forsake the methods of acquirs ing a safe, an honest, and a plentiful livelihood, · and, at the hazard of even life itself, and what is mistakenly called dishonour, to break openly and bravely through the laws of his country, for un-· certain, unsteddy, and unsafe gain? Let me then ' hold myself contented with this reflection, that I have been wife, though unsuccessful, and am a GREAT, though an unhappy man.'

His foliloquy and his punch concluded together; for he had at every pause comforted himself with a fip. And now it came first into his head, that it would be more difficult to pay for it, than it was to fwallow it, when, to his great pleasure, he beheld, at another corner of the room, one of the gentlement whom he had employed in the attack on Heartfree, and who, he doubted not, would readily lend him a guinea or two; but he had the mortification, on applying to him, to hear that the gaming-table had stript him of all the booty which his own generofity had left in his possession. He was therefore obliged to pursue his usual method on such occasions: so, cocking his hat fiercely, he marched out of the room without making any excule, or any one daring to make the least demand.

CHAP. V.

are training that and the sale and the part of the first by

Containing many surprising adventures, which our Hero with GREAT GREATNESS atchieved.

W E will now leave our hero to take a short repose, and return to Mr Snap's, where at Wild's departure the fair Theodosia had again betaken herself to her stocking, and Miss Letty had retired up stairs to Mr Bagihot; but that gentleman had broken his parole, and having conveyed himself below stairs behind a door, he took the opportunity of Wild's fally to make his escape. We shall only observe, that Miss Letty's furprise was the greater, as she had, notwithstanding her promise to the contrary, taken the precaution to turn the key; but, in her hurry, she did it ineffectually. How wretched must have been the situation of this young creature, who had not only lott a lover, on whom her tender heart perfectly doated, but was exposed to the rage of an injured father, tenderly jealous of his honour, which was deeply engaged to the Sheriff of London and Middlesex for the safe custody of the faid Bagthot, and for which two very good responsible friends had given not only their words but their bonds!

But let us remove our eyes from this melancholy object, and survey our hero, who, after a successless fearch for Miss Straddle, with wonderful greatness of mind, and steddiness of countenance, went early in the morning to visit his friend Heartfree, at a time when the common herd of friends would have forfaken and avoided him. He entered the room with a chearful air, which he presently changed into surprise on seeing his friend in a nightgown, and with his wounded head bound about with linen, and looking extremely pale from a great effusion of blood. When Wild was informed by Heartfree what had happened, he first expressed great forrow, and afterwards suffered as violent agonies of rage against the robbers to burst from him. Heartfree, in compassion to the deep impressions his misfortune seemed to make on his friend, endeavoured

A P.

at

he

in-

in

nce

uc-

ect,

be-

re-

ion

uld

uir-

ood,

t is

and

un-

hen

at I

n a

ner;

th a

at it

is to

ield,

men

and

iinea

g to

m of

n his

e his

s hat

king

least

to lessen it as much as possible, at the same time exaggerating the obligation he owed to Wild, in which his wife likewise seconded him; and they breakfasted with more comfort than was reasonably to be expected after such an accident; Heartfree expressing great satisfaction that he had put the Count's note in another pocket-book, adding that such a loss would have been fatal to him; ' for, to confess the truth to you, my dear friend,' said he, ' I have had some losses lately · which have greatly perplexed my affairs; and though · I have many debts due to me from people of great fashion, I assure you I know not where to be certain of getting a shilling.' Wild greatly selicitated him on the lucky accident of preserving his note, and then proceeded, with much acrimony, to inveigh against the barbarity of people of fashion, who kept tradesmen out

of their money.

While they amused themselves with discourses of this kind, Wild, meditating within himself whether he should borrow or steal from his friend, or indeed whether he could not effect both, the apprentice brought a bank-note of 500 l. in to Heartfree, which, he said, a gentlewoman in the shop, who had been looking at some jewels, defired him to exchange. Heartfree looking at the number, immediately recollected it to be one of those he had been robbed of. With this discovery he acquainted Wild, who, with the notable presence of mind, and unchanged complection, to essential to a great character, advised him to proceed cautiously; and offered (as Mr Heartfree himself was, he said, too much flustered to examine the woman with sufficient art) to take her into a room in his house alone. He would, he said, personate the master of the shop, would pretend to shew her some jewels, and would undertake to get sufficient information out of her to secure the rogues, and most probably all their booty. This proposal was readily and thankfully accepted by Heartfree. Wild went immediately up stairs into the room appointed, whither the apprentice, according to appointment, conducted the lady. The

te

0

fh

ar

Ce

The apprentice was ordered down stairs the moment the lady entered the room; and Wild, having thut the door, approached her with great ferocity in his looks, and began to expatiate on the complicated baseness of the crime she had been guilty of; but though he uttered many good lessons of morality, as we doubt whether from a particular reason they may work any very good effect on our reader, we shall omit his speech, and only mention his conclusion, which was by asking her, what mercy she could now expect from him? Miss Straddle; for that was the young lady, who had had a good education, and had been more than once present at the Old Bailey, very confidently denied the whole charge, and faid, she had received the note from a friend. Wild then raising his voice, told her, she should be immediately committed, and she might depend on being convicted; 'but,' added he, changing his tone, 'as I have a violent affection for thee, my dear Straddle, if you will follow my advice, I promise you on my honour, ' to forgive you, nor shall you ever be called in que-' stion on this account.' 'Why, what would you have ' me to do, Mr Wild?' replied the young lady, with a pleasanter aspect. 'You must know then,' said Wild, ' the money you picked out of my pocket (nay, by G-d you did, and if you offer to flinch, you shall be convicted of it) I won at play of a fellow who, it ' feems, robbed my friend of it; you must therefore ' give an information on oath against one Thomas ' Fierce, and fay that you received the note from him, and leave the rest to me. I am certain, Molly, you must be sensible of your obligations to me, who return good for evil to you in this manner.' The lady readily consented; and advanced to embrace Mr Wild, who stept a little back, and cried: 'Hold, ' Molly; there are two other notes of 200 l. each to ' be accounted for, where are they?' The lady protested with the most solemn affeverations that the knew of no more; with which, when Wild was not fatisfied, the cried: ' I will stand fearch.' ' That you shall,' answered Wild, ' and stand strip too;' he then proceeded to tumble and search her, but to no purpose, till

ree ine om the me naab-

n

h

at

in

m

en

he

ut

of

er

ed

ice

ch,

en

ge.

ol-

of.

ith

m-

im

and methe the

The

till at last she burst into tears, and declared she would tell the truth (as indeed she did;) she then confessed that she had disposed of the one to Jack Swagger, a great favourite of the ladies, being an Irish gentleman who had been bred clerk to an attorney, afterwards whipt out of a regiment of dragoons, and was then a Newgate-follicitor, and a bawdy-house bully; and as for the other, the had laid it all out that very morning in brocaded filks and Flanders lace. With this account Wild, who indeed knew it to be a very probable one, was forced to be contented; and now abandoning all further thoughts of what he saw was irretrievably loft, he gave the lady fome further instructions, and then, defiring her to stay a few minutes behind him, he returned to his friend, and acquainted him that he had discovered the whole roguery; that the woman had confessed from whom she had received the note, and promised to give an information before a justice of peace: adding, he was concerned he could not attend him thither, being obliged to go to the other end of the town to receive thirty pounds, which he was to pay that evening. Heartfree faid that should not prevent him of his company, for he could easily lend him fuch a trifle. This was accordingly done and accepted, and Wild, Heartfree, and the lady went to the justice together.

The warrant being granted, and the constable being acquainted by the lady, who received her information from Wild of Mr Fierce's haunts, he was easily apprehended, and being confronted with Miss Straddle, who swore positively to him, though she had never seen him before; he was committed. Newgate, where he immediately conveyed an account to Wild of what had happened, and in the evening received a visit from

him.

1115

Wild affected great concern for his friend's misfortune, and as great surprise at the means by which it was brought about. However, he told Fierce that he must certainly be mistaken in that point, of his having had no acquaintance with Miss Straddle; but added that he would find her out, and endeavour to take off her evidence; which, he observed, did not

come

h

f

C

kı

at

P

he

th

fe

ar

of

W.

pe

come home enough to endanger him; besides, he would secure him witnesses of an alibi, and sive or six to his character; so that he need be under no apprehension, for his confinement till the sessions would be his only punishment.

Fierce, who was greatly comforted by these asfurances of his friend, returned him many thanks, and both shaking each other very earnestly by the hand,

with a very hearty embrace they separated.

n

as

11.

is

0-

n-

.6.

IC-

e-

ed

lat

red

ea

uld

0.

ich

uld

fily

and

t to

eing

tion

pre-

who

him

im-

vhat

rom

sfor-

hich

that'

his

but

r to

not

come

The hero confidered with himself that the single-evidence of Miss Straddle would not be sufficient to convict Fierce, whom he resolved to hang, as he was the person who had principally resused to deliver him the stipulated share of the booty; he therefore went in quest of Mr James Sly, the gentleman who had assisted in the exploit; and sound, and acquainted him with the apprehending of Fierce. Wild then intimating his fear, lest Fierce thould impeach Sly, advised him to be beforehand, to surrender himself to a justice of peace, and offer himself as an evidence. Sly approved Mr Wild's opinion, went directly to a magistrate, and was by him committed to the Gatehouse, with a promise of being admitted evidence against his companion.

Fierce was, in a few days, brought to his trial at the Old Baily, where, to his great confusion, his old friend Sly appeared against him, as did Miss Straddle. His only hopes were now in the assistances which our hero had promised him. These unhappily failed him: so that the evidence being plain against him, and he making no defence, the jury convicted him, the court

condemned him, and Mr Ketch executed him.

With such infinite address did this truly great man know how to play with the passions of men, to set them at variance with each other, and to work his own purposes out of those jealousies and apprehensions, which he was wonderfully ready at creating by means of those great arts, which the vulgar call treachery, dissembling, promising, lying, saltehood, &c. but which are by great men summed up in the collective name of policy, or politics, or rather politricks; an art of which, as it is the highest excellence of human nature, perhaps our great man was the most eminent master.

C H A P.

C H A P. VI-

Of Hats.

IILD had now got together a very confiderable gang, composed of undone gamesters, ruined bailiffs, broken tradesmen, idle apprentices, attorneys clerks, and loofe and diforderly youth, who being born to no fortune, nor bred to any trade or profession, were willing to live luxuriously without labour. As these persons wore different Principles, i. e. Hats, frequent dissentions grew among them. There were particularly two parties, viz. those who wore hats fiercely cocked, and those who preferr'd the Nab or treacher hat, with the brim flapping over their eyes. The former were called Gavaliers and Tory Rory Ranter Boys, &c. The latter went by the several names of Wags, Round heads. Shake-Bags, Old-Nolls, and several others. Between these, continual jars arose; infomuch, that they grew in time to think there was fomething essential in their differences, and that their interests were incompatible with each other, whereas, in truth, the difference lay only in the fashion of their hats. Wild therefore, having affembled them all at an ale-house on the night after Fierce's execution, and perceiving evident marks of their misunderstanding, from their behaviour to each other, addressed them in the following gentle, but forcible manner *: ' Gentlemen,

. P

cou

had

or f

Thi

hatt

off

with

the

There is something very mysterious in this speech, which probably that chapter written by Aristotle on this subject, which is mentioned by a French author, might have given some light into; but that is unhappily among the lost works of that philosopher. It is remarkable, that Galerus, which is Latin for a Hat, signifies likewise a dog-sish, as the Greek word Kurén doth the kin of that animal; of which I suppose the hats or helmets of the ancients were composed, as ours at present are of the heaver or rabbit Sophocles, in the latter end of his Ajax, alludes to a method of cheating in hats, and the scholiast on the place tells us of one Crephontes, who was a master of the art. It is observable likewise, that Achilles, in the first Iliad of Homer, tells Agamemnon, in anger, that he had dog's eyes. Now, as the eyes of a dog are handsomer than those of almost any other animal; this could

tlemen, I am ashamed to see men embarked in so great and glorious an undertaking, as that of robbing the public, so soolishly and weakly dissenting ' among themselves. Do you think the first inventors of hats, or at least of the distinctions between them, really conceived that one form of hats thould ' inspire a man with divinity, another with law, another with learning, or another with bravery? No, they meant no more by these outward signs, than to impose on the vulgar, and instead of putting great men to the trouble of acquiring or maintaining the substance, to make it sufficient that they condescended to wear the type or shadow of it. ' You do wisely, therefore, when in a crowd, to ' amuse the mob by quarrels on such accounts, that while they are listening to your jargon, you may, with the greater ease and safety, pick their pockets: but furely to be in earnest, and privately to keep up such a ridiculous contention among yourselves, must argue the highest folly and absurdity. When you know you are all Prigs, what difference can a broad or narrow brim create? Is a Prig less a Prig in one hat than in another? If the public should be weak enough to interest themselves in your quarrels, and to prefer one pack to the other, while both are aiming at their purses; it is your business to laugh at, not to imitate their folly. What can be more ridiculous than for gentlemen to quarrel about hats, when there is not one among you, whose hat 'is worth a farthing. What is the use of a hat, ' farther than to keep the head warm, or to hide a ' bald crown from the public? It is the mark of a gentleman to move his hat on every occasion; and 'in courts and noble affemblies, no man ever wears

as

ir

s,

ir

at

nd

g,

m

n-

en,

ich

ich

ght

olo-

at,

of

ver

to

ells

ga-

of

his

could be no term of reproach. He must therefore mean that he had a hat on, which, perhaps, from the creature it was made of, or from some other reason, might have been a mark of infamy. This superstitious opinion may account for that custom, which hath descended through all nations, of shewing respect by pulling off this covering; and that no man is esteemed sit to converte with his superiors with it on. I shall conclude this learned note, with remarking, that the term Old Hat, is at present used by the vulgar, in no very honourable sense.

one.

one. Let me hear no more therefore of this childish disagreement, but all toss up your hats together with one accord, and consider that hat as the best, which will contain the largest booty. He thus ended his speech, which was followed by a mormuring applause, and immediately all present tossed their hats together as he had commanded them.

C H A P. VII.

Shewing the consequence which attended Heartfree's adventures with Wild; all natural, and common enough to little wretches whordeal with Great men; together with some precedents of letters, being the different methods of answering a dun.

Count's note, which he had paid away, was returned, with an account that the drawer was not to be found; and that, on enquiry after him, they had heard he was run away, and confequently the money was now demanded of the indorfer. The apprehention of fuch a lofs would have affected any man of business, but much more one whose unavoidable ruin it must prove. He expressed so much concern and confusion on this occasion, that the proprietor of the note was frightened, and resolved to lose no time in securing what he could. So that, in the afternoon of the same day, Mr Snap was commissioned to pay Heartfree a visit, which he did with his usual formality, and conveyed him to his own house.

Mrs Heartfree was no sooner informed of what had happened to her husband, than she raved like one distracted; but after she had vented the first agonies of her passion in tears and lamentations, she applied herself to all possible means to procure her husband's liberty. She hastened to beg her neighbours to secure bail for him. But as the news had arrived at their houses before her, she found none of them at home, except an honest Quaker, whose servants durst not tell a lie. However, she succeeded no better with him, for unluckily he had made an affirmation the day before, that he would never be bail for any man.

After

fu

to

m

at

ha

pa

ab

fid

her

ing

of l

fed

tem

shall

only

his 1

of th

have

ent

18

r.

ir

id-

igh

ber

ent

the

was

t to

had

ney

hen-

n of

ruin

and

the

e in

on of

pay

mali-

what

e one

gonies

pplied

and's

secure

their

home,

ft not

with

n the

man.

After

After many fruitless efforts of this kind, she repaired to her husband to comfort him, at least with her prefence. She found him fealing the last of feveral letters, which he was dispatching to his friends and creditors. The moment he faw her, a fudden joy sparkled in his eyes, which, however, had a very short duration; for despair soon closed them again; nor could he help burfting into some passionate expressions of concern for her and his little family; which the on her part, did her utmost to lessen, by endeavouring to mitigate the loss, and to raise in him hopes from the Count, who might, she said, be possibly only gone into the country. She comforted him likewise with the expectation of favour from his acquaintance, especially from those whom he had in a particular manner obliged and served. Lastly, she conjured him by all the value and esteem he professed for her, not to endanger his health, on which alone depended her happiness, by too great an indulgence of grief; asfuring him that no state of life could appear unhappy to her with him, unless his own forrow or discontent made it fo.

In this manner did this weak, poor-spirited woman attempt to relieve her husband's pains, which it would have rather become her to aggravate, by not only painting out his misery in the liveliest colours imaginable, but by upbraiding him with that folly and confidence which had occasioned it, and by lamenting her own hard fate, in being obliged to share his sufferings.

Heartfree returned this goodness (as it is called) of his wife, with the warmest gratitude, and they passed an hour in a scene of tenderness, too low and contemptible to be recounted to our great readers. We shall therefore omit all such relations, as they tend only to make human nature low and ridiculous.

Those messengers who had obtained any answers to his letters now returned. We shall here copy a sew of them, as they may serve for precedents to others who have an occasion, which happens commonly enough in enteel life, to answer the impertinence of a dun.

LETTER I.

MR HEARTFREE,

MY Lord commands me to tell you, he is very much furprised at your assurance in asking for money, which you know hath been so little while due; however, as he intends to deal no longer at your shop, he hath ordered me to pay you as foon as I shall have cash in hand, which, considering many disbursements for bills long due, &c. can't possibly promise any time, &c. at present. And am

me to co, the vale seldmud ruo You especially after

doidy to shill you no be ROGER MORECRAFT. of

fo

th:

an

WC

pre

eva

at

one

poli

Of

to p

in d

of w

affui

od i

In v

DES

mucl

whic.

Good

ers,

am very greatly concerned at your mistory nest.

DEAR SIR,

HE money, as you truly say, hath been three years due, but upon my foul I am at present incapable of paying a farthing; but as I doubt not very shortly, not only to content that small bill, but likewise to lay out very considerable further sums at your house, hope you will meet with no inconvenience by this thort delay in, dear Sir,

There were merement flomt ruo Your the fame purs

and still a rebest the humble fervant,

The court for a it can to the mother than Courtly.

bat mit Adar La To T To ER mille ad al alert ba

MR HEARTFREE, circumorio guidinuch inslain stone le

BEG you would not acquaint my husband of the trifling debt between us; for, as I know you to be a very good natured man, I will trust you with a fecret. He gave me the money long fince to discharge it, which I had the ill luck to lofe at play. You may be affired I will fatisfy you the first opportunity, and T us remove therefore, as fall as we canic am

and malary box Your very humble fervant, lateb

ot enauth affir portraite of that affirance to

Please to present my compliments to Mrs Heart baisaque orad TETTER before his eyes; not

LETTER IV.

MR THOMAS HEARTFREE, SIR, UURS received; but as to sum mentioned therein doth not fuit at present. Your humble fervant,

en noch as nov yag of PETER LOUNCE.

cash in band, why RETTER TER

.6

ts

e,

Ol.

that

ms

KOI

ree

ent

not

but

at

ace

CALL IN

f the

to be

ith a

arge

may

and

leart

ER

SIR. AM fincerely forry it is not at present possible for me to comply with your request, especially after so many obligations received on my side, of which t shall always entertain the most grateful memory. I am very greatly concerned at your misfortunes, and would have waited upon you in person, but am not at present very well, and, besides, am obliged to go this evening to Vaux-hall. I am, Sir,

Your most obliged humble servant,

CHA. EASY.

P. S. I hope good Mrs Heartfree and the dear little ones are well. by this thort delay in, dear Sir,

There were more letters to much the same purpose; but we proposed giving our reader a talle only. Of all thele, the last was infinitely the most grating to poor Heartfree, as it came from one to whom, when in diffress, he had himself lent a considerable sum, and of whose present flourithing circumstances he was well affured. BEG you would not acquaint my hulband

sd of nor won C' H A P. asville deb guilling

s very good natured man, I will trill you with a In which our Hero carries Greatness to an immoderate yam noy vale at plat. You may latisfy you lee noft oppositionity, and

ET us remove therefore, as fast as we can, this detellable picture of ingratitude, and present the much more agreeable portrait of that affurance to which the French very properly annex the epithet of Good. Heartfree had scarce done reading his lefers, when our hero appeared before his eyes; not H 2 with

H

th

D

af

Pic

fti

ed

pa

th

vei

to

. (

fai

. 2

· v

W

a m

101

and

pos

WO

who

van

A

cels

felve

you

a pa

The

whit

pro.

· only

with that aspect with which a pitiful parson meets his patron, after having opposed him at an election, or which a doctor wears, when fneaking away from a door, where he is informed of his patient's death; not with that down cast countenance which betrays the man, who, after a strong conflict between virtue and vice, hath furrendered his mind to the latter, and is discovered in his first treachery; but with that noble, bold, great confidence with which a prime minister affires his dependent, that the place he promised him was disposed of before. And such concern and unenfiness as he expresses in his looks on those occasions, did Wild testify on the first meeting of his friend. And as the faid prime minister chides you for neglect of your interest, in not having asked in time, so did our hero attack Heartfree for his giving credit to the Count; and, without fuffering him to make any anfwer, proceeded in a torrent of words to overwhelm him with abuse; which, however friendly his intention might be, was fcarce to be outdone by an enemy. By these means Heartfree, who might perhaps otherwife have vented fome little concern for that recommendation which Wild had given him to the Count, was totally prevented from any such endeavour, and like an invading prince, when attacked in his own dominions, forced to recal his whole strength to defend himself at home. This indeed he did so well, by infifting on the figure and outward appearance of the Count and his equipage, that Wild at length grew a little more gentle, and with a figh said, "I confess I have the least reason of all mankind to censure another for an imprudence of this nature, as I am myfelf the most easy to be imposed upon, and indeed, have been so by this Count, who, if he be insolvent, hath cheated me of five hundred pounds. But, for my own part,' faid he, 'I will not yet de-

But, for my own part,' said he, 'I will not yet defpair, nor would I have you. Many men have found it convenient to retire, or abscond for a while, and

afterwards have paid their debts, or at least hand-

fomely compounded them. This I am certain of

I think that can be apprehended, I shall be the

only loser; for I shall think myself obliged in homour to repair your loss, even though you must confess it was principally owing to your own folly.

Z—ds! had I imagined it necessary, I would have cautioned you; but I thought the part of the town where he lived, sufficient caution not to trust him—

And such a sum!——The devil must have been in

Syou certainly ! fed : Trendeers flat aid of berevool by

le

d

e,

er

m

n.

ns,

nd

of

TUC

the

an-

elm

en-

ny.

ner-

om-

unt,

and

dwo

de-

well

e of

grew

nfess

nfure

my.

deed,

infol-

unds.

et de

found

and

nand-

in of,

work

e the

only

This was a degree of impudence beyond poor Mrs Heartfree's imagination. I hough the had before vented the most violent execrations on Wild, she was now thoroughly fatisfied of his innocence, and begged him not to infift any longer on what he perceived to deeply affected her husband. She faid, trade could not be carried on without credit, and furely he was fufficiently justified in giving it to such a person as the Count appeared to be. Besides, she said, reslections on what was past and irretrievable would be of little service; that their present business was to consider how to prevent the evil consequences which threatened, and first to endeavour to procure her husband his liberty. ' Why ' doth he not procure bail?' faid Wild. ' Alas! Sir," faid she, ' we have applied to many of our acquaint-"ance in vain; we have met with excuses even where we could least expect them.' 'Not bail!' answered Wild, in a passion, ' he shall have bail, if there is any in the world. It is now very late, but truft me to procure him bail to-morrow morning.

Mrs Heartfree received these professions with tears, and told Wild he was a friend indeed. She then proposed to stay that evening with her husband; but he would not permit her, on account of his little samily, whom he would not agree to trust to the care of ser-

vants in this time of confusion.

A hackney coach was then sent for, but without success; for these, like hackney friends, always offer themselves in the sunshine, but are never to be found when you want them. And as for a chair, Mr Snap lived in a part of the town which chairmen very little frequent. The good woman was therefore obliged to walk home, whither the gallant Wild offered to attend her as a projector. This favour was thankfully accepted, and

H 3

the.

the husband and wife having taken a tender leave of each other, the former was locked in, and the latter

locked out by the hands of Mr Snap himfelf.

As this vifit of Mr Wild's to Heartfree may feem one of those passages in history, which writers, Drawcanfir like, introduce, only because they dare; indeed as it may feem fomewhat contradictory to the greatness of our hero, and may tend to blemish his character with an imputation of that kind of friendship, which favours too much of weakness and imprudence; it may be necessary to account for this visit, especially to our more sagacious readers, whose satisfaction we shall always consult in the most especial manner. They are to know then, that at the first interview with Mrs Heartfree, Mr Wild had conceived that passion, or affection, or friendship, or desire, for that handsome creature, which the gentlemen of this our age agree to call Love; and which is indeed no other than that kind of affection which, after the exercise of the dominical day is over, a lufty divine is apt to conceive for the well-dreft firloin or handsome buttock, which the well-edified squire in gratitude sets before him, and which, so violent is his love, he devours in imagination the moment he sees it. Not less ardent was the hungry passion of our hero, who from the moment he had cast his eyes on that charming dish, had cast about in his mind by what method he might come at it. This, as he perceived, might most easily be effected after the ruin of Heartfree, which, for other considerations, he had intended. So he postponed all endeavours for this purpose, till he had first effected what, by order of time, was regularly to precede this latter defign: with fuch regularity did this our hero conduct all his schemes, and so truly superior was he to all the efforts of passion, which so often disconcert and disappoint the noblest views of others. thed hameter, whithout sectioning a new the case

with the brightien, or giving her any, caust n.

it who has continue having a very countries and

 P

m

re

le

pl

th

he

fhe

the

po

al

lov

ma

god

wit

it v

one

tha

each other, the XI me A P A CHa O and the

the hulband and wife having taken a tender feave or

More GREATNESS in Wild. A low scene between Mre. Heartfree and her children, and a scheme of our hero worthy the highest admiration, and even astonishment.

THEN first Wild conducted his flame (or ra-VV ther his dish, to continue our metaphor) from the proprietor, he had projected a design of conveying her to one of those eating-houses in Covent-Garden, where female flesh is delicionsly drest, and served up to the greedy appetites of young gentlemen; but fearing left the should not come readily enough into his wishes, and that by too eager and hasty a pursuit, he should frustrate his future expectations, and luckily at the same time a noble hint suggesting itself to him, by which he might almost inevitably secure his pleafure, together with his profit, he contented himself with waiting on Mrs Heartfree home, and after many protestations of friendship and service to her husband, took his leave, and promifed to vifit her early in the morning, and to couduct her back to Mr Snap's.

Wild now retired to a night cellar, where he found feveral of his acquaintance, with whom he spent the remaining part of the night in revelling; nor did the least compassion for Heartfree's missortunes disturb the

pleasure of his cups. So truly great was his soul, that it was absolutely composed, save that an apprehension of Miss Tishy's making some discovery (as she was then in no good temper towards him) a little russed and disquieted the perfect serenity he would otherwise have enjoyed. As he had, therefore, no op-

portunity of seeing her that evening, he wrote her a letter full of ten thousand protestations of honourable love, and (which he more depended on) containing as many promises, in order to bring the young lady into good humour, without acquainting her in the least

with his suspicion, or giving her any caution: for it was his constant maxim, never to put it into any one's head to do you a mischief, by acquainting him

that it is in his power.

ve

y

rs

70

ne

ee

at

10-

ive

ich

im,

gi-

the

ent

cast

t it.

cted

der-

dea-

hat,

atter

Bub

the

dif-

Do II

AP.

We must now return to Mrs Heartsree, who passed a sleeples night in as great agonies and horror fort he absence of her husband, as a fine well bred woman would feel at the return of her's from a long voyage or journey. In the morning the children being brought to her the eldest asked, 'where dear papa was?' At which she could not refrain from bursting into tears. The child perceiving it, said, 'Don't cry, Mamma, I am sure Papa would not stay abroad if he could help it.' At these words she caught the child in her arms, and throwing herself into the chair, in an agony of passion cried out, 'No, my child, nor shall all the malice of hell keep us long asunder.'

These are circumstances which we should not, for the amusement of six or seven readers only, have inserted, had they not served to shew, that there are weaknesses in vulgar life, to which great minds are so entirely strangers, that they have not even an idea of them; and, secondly, by exposing the folly of this low creature, to set off and elevate that greatness, of which we endeavour to draw a true portrait in this

history.

Wild entering the room, found the mother with one child in her arms, and the other at her knee. After paying her his compliments, he defired her to dismiss the children and servant, for that he had something of the greatest moment to impart to her.

C

Y

2

H

01

DO

W

io

lu

th

he

dit

bas

She immediately complied with his request, and, the door being shut, asked him with great eagerness if he had fucceeded in his intentions of procuring the bail. He answered, he had not endeavoured at it yet; for a scheme had entered into his head, by which she might certainly preferve her husband, herself, and her family. In order to which he advised her instantly to remove with the most valuable jewels the had to Holland, before any statute of bankruptcy issued to prevent her; that he would himself attend her thither, and place her in fafety, and then return to deliver her husband, who would be thus easily able to satisfy his creditors. He added, that he was that instant come from Mr Snap's, where he had communicated the scheme to Heartfree, who had greatly approved of it, and:

and defired her to put it in execution without delay, concluding that a moment was not to be loft.

e

t

t

I

p.

S,

of.

ne.

or.

n-

re.

re

ea

his

of,

his

ith

ee.

to

ne.

nd,

ness.

the

yet;

the

and.

ant-

d to

d to

her,

liver

tisfy

come

the

of it,

and

The mention of her husband's approbation left no doubt in this poor woman's breaft; the only defired a moment's time to pay him a visit, in order to take her leave. But Wild peremptorily refused; he said, by every moment's delay she risqued the ruin of her family; that she would be absent only a few days from him, for that the moment he had lodged her fale in Holland, he would return, procure her husband his liberty, and bring him to her. ' I have been the unfor-' tunate, the innocent cause of all my dear Tom's calami-'ty, Madam,' faid he; 'and I will perish with him, or 'fee him out of it.' Mrs Heartfree overflowed with acknowledgements of his goodness; but still begged for the shortest interview with her husband. Wild declared, that a minute's delay might be fatal; and added, tho' with the voice of forrow rather than of anger, that if the had not resolution enough to execute the commands he brought her from her husband, his ruin would lie at her door; and, for his own part, he must give up any farther meddling in her affairs.

She then proposed to take her children with her: but Wild would not permit it saying, they would only retard their slight, and that it would be properer for her husband to bring them. He at length absolutely prevailed on this poor woman, who immediately packed up the most valuable effects she could find, and, after taking a tender leave of her infants, earnestly commeded them to the care of a very faithful servant. Then they called a hackney coach, which conveyed them to an inn, where they were furnished with a chariot and fix, in which they set forward for Harwich.

Wild rode with an exulting heart; secure, as he now thought himself, of the possession of that lovely woman, together with a rich cargo. In short, he enjoyed in his mind all the happiness which unbridled lust and rapacious avarice could promise him. As to the poor creature, who was to satisfy these passions, her whole soul was employed in reflecting on the condition of her husband and children. A single word

scarce escaped her lips, tho' many a tear gushed from her brilliant eyes, which, if I may use a coarse expression, served only as delicious sauce to heighten the appetite of Wild.

CHAP. X

Sea adventures very new and surprising.

h

e

th

in

On

We

die

his

ble

11p

ha

dit

firi

wit

vef

am

and

fen

oth

fhe

ing

not.

and

the

THEN they arrived at Harwich, they found a vessel, which had put in there, just ready to depart for Rotterdam. So they went immediately on board, and failed with a fair wind; but they had hardly proceeded out of fight of land, when a sudden and violent storm arose, and drove them to the South-West; insomuch that the captain apprehended it impossible to avoid the Goodwin fands, and he and all his crew gave themselves up for lost. Mrs. Heartfree, who had no other apprehensions from death, but those of leaving her dear hulband and children, fell on her knees to beseech the Almighty's favour, when Wild, with a contempt of danger truly great, took a resolution as worthy to be admired perhaps as any recorded of the bravest hero, ancient or modern; a refolution, which plainly proved him to have these two qualifications so necessary to a hero, to be superior to all the energies of fear and pity. He saw the tyrant Death ready to rescue from him his intended prey, which he had yet devoured only in imagination. He therefore fwore he would prevent him, and immediately attacked the poor wretch, who was in the utmost agonies of despair, first with solicitation, and afterwards with force.

Mrs Heartfree, the moment she understood his meaning, which, in her present temper of mind, and in the opinion she held of him, she did not immediately, rejected him with all the repulses which indignation and horror could animate: but when he attempted violence, she filled the cabin with her shrieks, which were so vehement, that they reached the ears of the captain, the storm at this time luckily abating. This man, who was a brute, rather from his education, and the element he inhabited, than from nature,

her struggling on the ground with our hero, he prefently rescued her from her intended ravisher; who was soon obliged to quit the woman, in order to engage with her lusty champion, who spared neither pains

nor blows in the affistance of his fair passenger.

When this short battle was over, in which our hero, had he not been overpowered with numbers, who came down on their captain's side, would have been victorious; the captain rapped out a hearty oath, and asked Wild, 'If he had no more Christianity in him than to ravish a woman in a storm?' To which the other greatly and sullenly answered: 'It was very well; but d—n him if he had not satisfaction the moment they came on shore.' The captain with great scorn replied, 'Kiss,'——&c. and then forcing Wild out of the cabbin, he, at Mrs Heartfree's request, locked her

into it, and returned to the care of his ship.

le

n

en

a

e-

·e-

OW

or

ant

ey,

He

edi-

flor

ter-

his

and

edi-

lig-

at-

eks,

s of

pat-

his

mo

are,

The storm was now entirely ceased, and nothing remained but the usual ruffling of the sea after it, when one of the failors spied a fail at a distance, which the captain wifely apprehended might be a privateer (for we were then engaged in a war with France) and immediately ordered all the fail possible to be crowded; but his caution was in vain; for the little wind which then blew, was directly adverse; so that the ship bore down upon them, and foon appeared to be what the captain . had feared, a French Privateer. He was in no condition of relistance, and immediately struck on her firing the first gun. The captain of the Frenchman, with feveral of his hands, came on board the English veffel; which they rifled of every thing valuable, and, amongst the rest, of poor Mrs Heartfree's whole cargo; and then taking the crew, together with the two pafsengers, aboard his own ship, he determined, as the other would be only a burden to him, to fink her, the being very old and leaky, and not worth going back with to Dunkirk. He preserved, therefore, nothing but the boat, as his own was none of the bett, and then pouring a broadfide into her, he fent her-to. the bottom.

The French captain, who was a very young fellow, and a man of gallantry, was presently enamoured to no small degree with his beautiful captive; and imagining Wild, from some words he dropt, to be her husband, notwithstanding the ill affection toward him which appeared in her looks, he asked her, if she understood French? she answered in the affirmative, for indeed she did perfectly well. He then asked her how long she and that gentleman (pointing to Wild) had been married? the answered with a deep figh, and many tears, that she was married indeed, but not to that villain, who was the sole cause of all her misfortunes. That appellation raised a curiofity in the captain, and he importuned her in fo prefling, but gentle a manner, to acquaint him with the injuries she complained of, that she was at last prevailed on to recount to him the whole history of her afflictions. moved the captain, who had too little notions of greatness, and so incensed him against our hero, that he refolved to punish him; and, without regard to the laws of war, he immediately ordered out his shattered boat, and, making Wild a present of half a dozen biscuits to prolong his mifery, he put him therein, and then committing him to the mercy of the fea, proceeded on his cruize.

H A P. XI.

The great and wonderful behaviour of our Hero in the boat.

T is probable, that a defire of ingratiating himself with his charming captive, or rather conqueror. had no little share in promoting this extraordinary act of illegal justice; for the Frenchman had conceived the same fort of passion, or hunger, which Wild himfelf had felt, and was almost as much resolved, by some means or other, to fatisfy it. We will leave him, however, at present, in the pursuit of his wishes, and attend our hero in his boat; since it is in circumstances of distress that true greatness appears most wonderful. For, that a prince in the midst of his courtiers, all ready to compliment him with his favourite cha-

n

h

vi

Ve

of

ad

fitt

bo

at

thi

mu

thr

flar

tint

to e

With

repe

the

whic

cafio

him

ness

broke

but.

wh

any

me,

ther

me ?

but re

racter, or title, and indeed, with every thing else: or that a conqueror, at the head of an hundred thoufand men, all prepared to execute his will, how ambitious, wanton, or cruel foever, should, in the giddiness of their pride, elevate themselves many degrees above those their tools, seems not difficult to be imagined, or indeed accounted for. But that a man in chains, in prison, nay, in the vilest dungeon, should with persevering pride, and oblinate dignity, discover that vast superiority in his own nature over the rest of mankind, who to a vulgar eye feem much happier than himself; nay, that he should discover heaven and providence (whose peculiar care, it seems, he is) at that very time at work for him; this is among the arcana of greatness, to be perfectly understood only by an adept in that science.

What could be imagined more miserable than the situation of our hero at this season, sloating in a little boat on the open seas, without oar, without sail, and at the mercy of the sirst wave to overwhelm him? nay, this was indeed the fair side of his fortune, as it was a much more eligible sate than that alternative, which threatened him with almost unavoidable certainty, viz. starving with hunger, the sure consequence of a con-

tinuance of the calm.

le

n-

nt

fo

at-

re-

WS.

at,

uits

hen

on

the

eror,

v act

eived

him.

, by

him,

and

cum-

WOD.

tiers,

cha-

act et

Our hero finding himself in this condition, began to ejaculate a round of blasphemies, which the reader, without being over pious, might be offended at feeing repeated. He then accused the whole female fex, and the passion of love (as he called it) particularly that which he bore to Mrs Heartfree, as the unhappy occasion of his present sufferings. At length, finding himself descending too much into the language of meanness and complaint, he stopp'd short, and soon after broke forth as follows: D-n it, a man can die but once, what signifies it! every man must die, when it is over it is over. I never was afraid of 'any thing yet, nor I won't begin now; no, d-n 'me, won't I. What fignifies fear? I shall die whe-'ther I am afraid or no: Who's afraid then, d-n 'me?' At which words he looked extremely fierce, but recollecting that no one was present to see him,

he relaxed a little the terror of his countenance, and pauling a while, repeated the word, d-n! 'Suppose I should be d-ned at last, cries he, when I never thought a syllable of the matter! I have often · laughed and made a jest about it, and yet it may be fo, for any thing which I know to the contrary. If " there should be another world it will go hard with " me, that is certain. I shall never escape for what I · have done to Heartfree. The devil must have me for that undoubtedly. The devil! Pshaw! I am not fuch a fool to be frighten'd at him neither. No, no; when a man's dead, there's an end of him. I wish I was certainly fatisfied of it tho'; for there are · fome men of learning, as I have heard, of a different opinion. It is but a bad chance, methinks, [fland. If there be no other world, why I shall be in no worse condition than a block or a stone: but if there should. d-n me, I will think no longer about it .- Let a pack of cowardly rascals be afraid of death, I dare look him in the face. But · shall I stay and be starved! -No, I will eat up the biscuits the French son of a whore bestowed on me, and then leap into the fea for drink, fince the unconscionable dog hath not allowed me a single dram.' Having thus faid, he proceeded immediately to put his purpose in execution, and as his refolution never failed him, he had no fooner dispatched the small quantity of provision, which his enemy had with so vast liberality presented him, than he cast himfelf headlong into the fea.

C H A P. XII.

The strange and yet natural escape of our Hero.

Ohimself into the sea, as we mentioned at the end of the last chapter, was miraculously within two minutes after replaced in his boat; and this without the assistance of a dolphin or sea-horse, or any other sish or animal, who are always as ready at hand when a poet or historian pleases to call for them to carry a thero through a sea, as any chairman at a coffee-house

door

tl

fo

W

CC

tu

na

W

fou

to

felf

to :

obf

no

mai

lotn

amb

Of 1

fo g

for 1

Itag

limit

fuch

othe

Thei

them

the 1

the t

on th

door near St James's, to convey a beau over a street, and preserve his white stockings. The truth is, we do not chuse to have any recourse to miracles, from the strict observance we pay to that rule of Horace,

· Nec Deus intersit, nisi dignus vindice nodus.'

The meaning of which is, Do not bring in a supernatural agent when you can do without him; and indeed, we are much deeper read in natural than supernatural causes. We will therefore endeavour to account for this extraordinary event from the former of these; and in doing this it will be necessary to disclose fome profound fecrets to our reader, extremely well worth his knowing, and which may serve him to account for many occurrences of the phænomenous kind which have formerly appeared in this our hemisphere.

Be it known then, that the great Alma Mater, Nature, is of all other females the most obstinate, and tenacious of her purpose. So true is that observation,

Naturam expellas furca licet, usque recurret?

Which I need not render in English, it being to be found in a book which most fine gentlemen are forced to read. Whatever Nature, therefore, purposes to herfelf, she never suffers any reason, design, or accident, to frustrate. Now, though it may feem to a shallow observer, that some persons were designed by nature for no use or purpose whatever; yet certain it is, that no man is born into the world without his particular allotment; viz. some to be kings, some statesmen, some ambassadors, some bishops, some generals, and so on. Of these there be two kinds, those to whom nature is so generous to give some endowment, qualifying them for the parts she intends them afterwards to act on this stage; and those whom she uses as instances of her unlimited power, and for whose preferment to such and fuch stations Solomon himself could have invented no other reason than that Nature designed them so. These latter some great philosophers have, to shew. them to be the favourites of nature, distinguished by the honourable appellation of NATURALS. Indeed the true reason of the general ignorance of mankind on this head seems to be this: That as nature chuses

t the n two thout

rown

re

be

out

no

be

But

the

me,

un-

igle

edi-

re-

ched

had

him-

other when

rry a house

door

to execute these her purposes by certain second causes, and as many of these second causes seem so totally foreign to her design, the wit of man, which, like his eye, fees best directly forward, and very little and imperfeetly what is oblique, is not able to discern the end by the means. Thus, how a handsome wife or daughter thould contribute to execute her original designation of a general; or how flattery, or half a dozen houses in a borough-town, should denote a judge, or a bishop, he is not capable of comprehending. And, indeed, we ourselves, wise as we are, are forced to reafon ab effectu, and if we had been asked what nature had intended such men for, before she herself had by the event demonstrated her purpose, it is possible we might sometimes have been puzzled to declare; for it must be confessed, that at first sight, and to a mind uninspired, a man of vast natural capacity and much acquired knowledge may feem by nature defigned for power and honour, rather than one remarkable only for the want of these, and iudeed all other qualifications; whereas daily experience convinces us of the contrary, and drives us as it were into the opinion I have here disclosed.

Now, Nature having originally intended our great man for that final exaltation, which, as it is the most proper and becoming end of all great men, it were heartily to be wished they might all arrive at; would by no means be diverted from her purpose. She therefore no sooner spied him in the water, than she softly whispered in his ear to attempt the recovery of his boat; which call he immediately obeyed, and being a good swimmer, and it being a perfect calm, with great facility accomplished it.

Thus we think this passage in our history, at first so greatly surprising, is very naturally accounted for; and our relation rescued from the Prodigious, which, though it often occurs in Biography, is not to be encouraged nor much commended on any occasion, unless when absolutely necessary to prevent the history's being at an end. Secondly, we hope our hero is justified from that imputation of want of resolution, which must have been fatal to the greatness of his character.

CHAP.

П

te

P

g

bl

lin

di

m

a

pr

ev

pr

hi

his

in

wh

a v

ma

tho

the

hoi

lad

fha

kin

and

fell

qua

fore

had

filly

C H A P. XIII.

The conclusion of the boat adventure, and the end of the fecond book.

d

1-

n

r

d,

a-

re

oy

ve

it

11-

IC-

or

ly

2-

he

n I

eat

of

ere

uld

re-

ftly

his

ing ith

first

or;

ich,

en-

les

ing

fied

nust

A P.

Our hero pass'd the remainder of the evening, the night, and the next day, in a condition not much to be envied by any passion of the human mind, unless by ambition; which, provided it can only entertain itself with the most distant music of same's trumpet, can disdain all the pleasures of the sensualist, and those more solemn, though quiet comforts, which a good conscience suggests to a Christian philosopher.

He spent his time in contemplation, that is to fay, in blaspheming, cursing, and sometimes singing and whistling. At last, when cold and hunger had almost subdued his native fierceness, it being a good deal past midnight, and extremely dark, he thought he beheld a light at a distance, which the cloudiness of the sky prevented his mistaking for a star: This light, however, did not feem to approach him, at least it approached by fuch imperceptible degrees, that it gave him very little comfort, and at length totally forfook him. He then renewed his contemplations as before, in which he continued till the day began to break; when, to his inexpressible delight, he beheld a fail at a very little distance, and which luckily seemed to be making towards him. He was likewise soon espied by those in the vessel, who wanted no signals to inform them of his diffress, and as it was almost a calm, and their course lay within five hundred yards of him, they hoisted out their boat and fetched him aboard.

The captain of this ship was a Frenchman; she was laden with deal from Norway, and had been extremely shattered in the late storm. This captain was of that kind of men, who are actuated by a general humanity, and whose compassion can be raised by the distress of a sellow creature, though of a nation whose king hath quarrelled with the monarch of their own. He therefore commiserating the circumstances of Wild, who had dressed up a story proper to impose upon such a silly sellow; told him, that, as himself well knew, he

1 3

mult

must be a prisoner on his arrival in France, but that he would endeavour to procure his redemption; for which our hero greatly thanked him. But as they were making very flow fail (for they had loft their main mast in the storm) Wild saw a little vessel at a distance, they being within a few leagues of the English shore, which, on enquiry, he was informed was probably an English fishing-boat. And, it being then perfectly calm, he promised, that if they would accommodate him with a pair of scullers, he could get within reach of the boat, at least near enough to make figuals to her; and he preferred any risque to the certain fate of being a prisoner. As his courage was somewhat restored by the provisions (especially brandy) with which the Frenchman had supplied him, he was so earnest in his intreaties, that the captain, after many persuasions, at length complied; and he was furnished with scullers, and with some bread, pork, and a bottle of brandy. Then taking leave of his preservers, he again betook himself to his boat, and rowed so heartily, that he foon came within fight of the fisherman, who immediately made towards him, and took him aboard.

No sooner was Wild got safe on board the sisherman, than he begged him to make the utmost speed into Deal; for that the vessel, which was still in sight, was a distressed Frenchman, bound for Havre de Grace, and might easily be made a prize, if there was any ship ready to go in pursuit of her. So nobly and greatly did our hero neglect all obligations conferred on him by the enemies of his country, that he would have contributed all he could to the taking his benefector, to whom he owed both his life and his liberty.

The fisherman took his advice, and soon arrived at Deal, where the reader will, I doubt not, be as much concerned as Wild was, that there was not a single

· ship prepared to go on the expedition.

Our hero now saw himself once more safe on Terra Firma; but unluckily at some distance from that city where men of ingenuity can most easily supply their wants without the assistance of money, or rather can most easily procure money for the supply of their wants.

wants. However, as his talents were superior to every difficulty, he framed so dextrous an account of his being a merchant, having been taken and plundered by the enemy, and of his great effects in London, that he was not only heartily regaled by the fisherman at his house; but made so handsome a booty by way of borrowing, a method of taking which we have before mentioned to have his approbation, that he was enabled to provide himself with a place in the stage-coach; which (as God permitted it to perform the journey) brought him, at the appointed time, to an inn in the metropolis.

And now, reader, as thou canst be in no suspense for the fate of our great man, since we have returned him safe to the principal scene of his glory, we will a little look back on the fortunes of Mr Heartsree, whom we lest in no very pleasant situation; but of this we shall

treat in the next book.

THE

rerra city their can their

ants.

It

or

11

a

g-

as

en

m.

in

als

ate

nat

ith

fo

any

hed

ttle

he

ear-

an,

him

nan,

into

as a

and

fhip

eatly

him

con-

, to

ed at

nuch

HIS.TORY

OFTHE

LIFE

OF THE LATE

Mr JONATHAN WILD, THE GREAT.

B O O K III.

C H A P. I.

The low and pitiful behaviour of Heartfree; and the foolish conduct of his apprentice.

free from closing his eyes. On the contrary, he slept several hours the first night of his confinement. However, he perhaps paid too severely dear both for his repose, and for a sweet dream which accompanied it, and represented his little family in one of those tender scenes, which had frequently passed in the days of his happiness and prosperity, when the provision they were making for the suture fortunes of their children used to be one of the most agreeable topics of discourse, with which he and his wife entertained themselves. The pleasantness of this vision, therefore, served only, on his awaking, to set forth his present mistery with additional horror, and to heighten the dreadful ideas which now crowded on his mind.

He had spent a considerable time after his first rising from the bed on which he had, without undressing, thrown himself, and now began to wonder at Mrs

Heartfree's

h

m

al

fh

hu

Wa

ftu

ter

the

go

kit

the

the

ties

all

cor

of]

led

and

tion

his :

enti

the

which

Spee !

mint

othe

Wi!

' bid

of

are

Heartfree's long absence: but as the mind is desirous (and perhaps wisely too) to comfort itself with drawing the most flattering conclusions from all events; so he hoped the longer her stay was, the more certain was his deliverance. At length his impatience prevailed, and he was just going to dispatch a messenger to his own house, when his apprentice came to pay him a visit, and, on his enquiry, informed him, that his wife had departed in company with Mr Wild many hours before, and had carried all his most valuable effects with her; adding, at the same time, that she had herself positively acquainted him she had her husband's express orders for so doing, and that she was gone to Holland.

It is the observation of many wise men, who have studied the anatomy of the human soul with more attention than our young physicians generally bestow on that of the body, that great and violent surprise hath a different effect from that which is wrought in a good housewise by perceiving any disorders in her kitchen; who, on such occasions, commonly spreads the disorder, not only over her whole samily, but over the whole neighbourhood. Now, these great calamities, especially when sudden, tend to stifle and deaden all the saculties, instead of rousing them; and accordingly Herodotus tells us a story of Cræsus, king of Lydia, who on beholding his servants and courtiers led captive, wept bitterly; but when he saw his wife

and childern in that condition, stood stupid and mo-

tionless; so stood poor Heartfree on this relation of

his apprentice, nothing moving but his colour, which

the

rt-

ry,

on-

ear

ac-

e of

the

fion

hil-

dif-

em-

fer-

mi-

ead-

ft ri-

fing,

Mrs

ree's

chirely forfook his countenance.

The apprentice, who had not in the least doubted the veracity of his mistress, perceiving the surprise which too visibly appeared in his master, became speechless likewise, and both remained silent some minutes, gazing with astonishment and horror at each other. At last Heartsree cry'd out in an agony: 'My 'wise deserted me in my missortunes!' 'Heaven forbid, Sir,' answered the other. 'And what is become 'of my poor children?' replied Heartsree. 'They 'are at home, Sir,' said the apprentice. 'Heaven be 'praised!

nity.

praised! She hath forsaken them too,' cries Heartfree: 'Fetch them hither this instant. Go, my dear 'Jack, bring hither my little all that remains now: 'Fly, child, if thou dost not intend likewise to for-'sake me in my afflictions.' The youth answered, he would die sooner than entertain such a thought, and begging his master to be comforted, instantly obeyed his orders.

Heartfree, the moment the young man was departed, threw himself, on his bed in an agony of despair; but, recollecting himself, after he had vented the first sallies of his passion, he began to question the insidelity of his wife, as a matter impossible. He ran over in his thoughts the uninterrupted tenderness which she had always shewn him, and, for a minute, blamed the rashness of his belief against her; 'till the many circumstances of her having left him so long, and neither writ nor sent to him since her departure with all his effects, and with Wild, of whom he was not before without suspicion; and lastly and chiefly, her salse pretence to his commands, entirely turned the scale, and convinced him of her disloyalty.

While he was in these agitations of mind, the good apprentice, who had used the utmost expedition, brought his children to him. He embraced them with the most passionate fondness, and imprinted number-less kisses on their little lips. The little girl slew to him with almost as much eagerness as he himself expressed at her sight, and cry'd out: O Papa, why did you not come home to poor mamma all this while; I thought you would not have lest your little Nancy so long. After which he asked her for her mother, and was told she had kissed them both in the morning, and cried very much for his absence. All which brought a flood of tears into the eyes of this weak, filly man, who had not greatness sufficient

He then proceeded to enquire of the maid-servant, who acquainted him, that she knew no more than that her mistress had taken leave of her children in the morning with many tears and kisses, and had recom-

to conquer these low efforts of tenderness and huma-

mended

1

71

r-

le.

be

ed

d,

ut,

ies

of

his

ad

he

ir-

ner

his

ore

re-

and

boo

on,

rith

er-

v to

ex-

why

this

our

her

ooth

nce.

s of

ient

ma.

ant,

that

the

om.

nded

mended them in the most earnest manner to her care; she said she had promised faithfully to take care of them, and would, while they were entrusted to her, suffil her promise. For which profession Heartfree expressed much gratitude to her; and, after indulging himself with some little sondnesses, which we shall not relate, he delivered his children into the good woman's hands and dismissed her.

C H A P. II.

A soliloquy of Heartfree's, full of low and base ideas without a syllable of GREATNESS.

BEING now alone, he fat some short time silent, and then burst forth into the following soliloquy:

What shall I do? Shall I abandon myself to a dispirited despair, or fly in the face of the Al-' mighty? Surely both are unworthy of a wife man; for what can be more vain than weakly to lament ' my fortune, if irretrievable, or, if hope remains, to offend that Being, who can most strongly sup-' port it? But are my passions then voluntary? Am I ' so absolutely their master, that I can, resolve with ' myself, so far only will I grieve? Certainly no, Reason, however we flatter ourselves, hath not such ' despotic empire in our minds, that it can, with im-' perial voice, hush all our forrow in a moment. Where then is its use? For either it is an empty ' found, and we are deceived in thinking we have reason, or it is given us to some end, and hath a ' part assigned it by the all-wise Creator. Why, what can its office be, other than justly to weigh the worth of all things, and to direct us to that perfec-' tion of human wildom, which proportions our e-'sfeem of every object to its real merit, and prevents us from over or undervaluing whatever we hope for, we enjoy, or we lafe. It doth not foolithly fay to us Be not glad, or Be not forry, which would be as vain and as idle, as to bid the purling ' river cease to run, or the raging wind to blow. It military to the same as the prevents

prevents us only from exulting, like children, when we receive a toy, or from lamenting when we are deprived of it. Suppose then I have lost * the enjoyments of this world, and my expectation of future pleasure and profit is for ever disappoint. ed; what relief can my reason afford? What, un-· less it can shew me I had fixed my affections on a toy? that what I defired was not by a wife man eagerly to be affected, nor its loss violently deplored; for there are toys adapted to all ages, from the rattle to the throne; and perhaps the value of all is equal to their several possessors; for if the rattle · pleases the ear of the infant, what can the flattery of sycophants give more to the prince? The latter is as far from examining into the reality and fource of his pleasure as the former; for if both did, they must both equally despise it. And surely if we consider them feriously, and compare them toe gether, we shall be forced to conclude all those · pomps and pleasures, of which men are so fond; and which, through fo much danger and difficulty with fuch violence and villainy they purfue, to be as worthless trifles as any exposed to sale in a toyshop. I have often noted my little girl viewing with eager eyes, a jointed baby; I have marked the e pains and folicitations she hath used, till I have been prevailed on to indulge her with it. At her first obtaining it, what joy hath sparkled in her countenance! with what raptures hath she taken · possession; but how little satisfaction hath she found in it! What pains to work out her amusement from it! Its drefs must be varied; the tinfel ornaments which first caught her eyes, produce no longer · pleasure; she endeavours to make it stand and walk in vain, and is constrained herself to supply it with conversation. In a day's time it is thrown by and e neglected, and some lets costly toy preferred to it. · How like the fituation of this child is that of every 'man! What difficulties in the pursuit of his defires! What inanity in the possession of most, and · fatiety in those which seem more real and substantial! The delights of most men are as childish and as superficial as that of my little girl; a feather 10

n,

en

oft

on

it-

in-

a

ea-

d;

tle

ttle

ery

ter

rce

did,

y if

to-

ofe

nd;

ulty

be

toy-

with

the

nave

her

her

aken

ound

rom

ients

nger

walk

with

and

o it.

very

de-

and

stan-

and

ther

6 OF

or a fiddle are their pursuits and their pleasures thro' · life even to their ripest years, if such men may be faid to attain any ripeness at all. But let us survey those whose understandings are of a more elevated and refined temper: How empty do they foon find the world of enjoyments worth their defire or attaining! How foon do they retreat to folitude and contemplation, to gardeniag, and planting, and fuch rural amusements, where their trees and they enjoy the air and the fun in common, and both vegetate with very little difference between them! But fup-' pose (which neither truth nor wisdom will allow), we could admit something more valuable and sub-' stantial in these blessings, would not the uncertainty of their possession be alone sufficient to lower their ' price? How mean a tenure is that at the will of Fortune, which chance, fraud, and rapine, are every day so likely to deprive us of, and often the more ' likely by how much the greater worth our possessions ' are of! Is it not to place our affections on a bubble in the water, or on a picture in the clouds! What ' madman would build a fine house, or frame a beau-' tiful garden on land in which he held fo uncertain ' an interest! But again, was all this less undeniable, ' did Fortune, the lady of our manor, lease to us for our lives; of how little confideration must even this term appear? For admitting that these pleasures were not liable to be torn from us; how certainly ' must we be torn from them! Perhaps to-morrow,-' Nay or even fooner: For, as the excellent poet fays,

" Where is to-morrow? -- In the other world.

" To thousands this is true, and the reverse

" Is fure to none."

But if I have no further hope in this world, can I have none beyond it? Surely those laborious writers, who have taken such infinite pains to destroy or weaken all the proofs of suturity, have not so far succeeded as to exclude us from hope. That active principle in man which with such boldness pushes us on through every labour and difficulty, to

attain the most distant and most improbable event in this world, will not furely deny us a little flattering prospect of those beautiful mansions, which, if * they could be thought chimerical, must be allowed " the loveliest which can entertain the eye of man; and to which the road, if we understand it rightly, appears to have fo few thorns and briers in it, and to require so little labour and fatigue from those who fhall pass through it, that its ways are truly said to be ways of pleasantness, and all its paths to be those of peace. If the proofs of Christianity be as strong as I imagine them, furely enough may be deduced " from that ground only, to comfort and support the · most miserable man in his afflictions. And this, I think, my reason tells me, that if the professors and · propagators of infidelity are in the right, the losses which death brings to the virtuous are not worth their lamenting; but if these are, as certainly they feem, in the wrong, the bleffings it procures them " are not sufficiently to be coveted and rejoiced at.

On my own account, then, I have no cause for forrow, but on my childrens-! Why, the same Being to whose goodness and power I entrust my own happiness, is likewise as able and as willing to e procure theirs. Nor matters it what state of life is allotted for them, whether it be their fate to procure bread with their own labour, or to eat it at the weat of others. Perhaps, if we consider the case with proper attention, or resolve it with due sincerity; the former is much the sweeter. The hind may be more happy than the lord; for his defires are fewer, and those such as are attended with more hope and less fear. I will do my utmost to lay the · foundations of my childrens happiness, I will care-· fully avoid educating them in a station superior to their fortune, and for the event trust to that Being in whom whoever rightly confides, must be superior

In this low manner did this poor wretch proceed to argue, till he had worked himfelf up into an enthusiasm, which by degrees soon became invulnerable to

every human attack; so that when Mr Snap acquainted him with the return of the writ, and that he must carry him to Newgate, he received the message as Socrates did the news of the ship's arrival, and that he was to prepare for death.

C H A P. III. Wherein our Hero proceeds in the road to Greatness.

But we must not detain our reader too long with these low characters. He is doubtless as impatient as the audience at the theatre, till the principal sigure returns on the stage; we will therefore include his inclination, and pursue the actions of the Great Wild.

There happened to be in the stage-coach, in which Mr Wild travelled from Dover, a certain young gentleman who had fold an estate in Kent, and was going to London to receive the money. There was likewife a handsome young woman who had left her parents at Canterbury, and was proceeding to the same city, in order, as the informed her fellow-travellers, to make her fortune. With this girl the young spark was so much enamoured, that he publicly acquainted her with the purpose of his journey, and offered her a considerable fum in hand and a fettlement, if she would confent to return with him into the country, where the would be at a safe distance from her relations. Whether the accepted this propofal or no, we are not able with any tolerable certainty to deliver: but Wild, the moment he heard of this money, began to cast about in his mind by what means he might become malter of it. He entered into a long harangue about the methods of carrying money fafely on the road, and faid, he had at that time two bank bills of a hundred pounds each fewed in his coat; which, added he, is so safe a way, that it is almost impossible I should be in any danger of being robbed by the most cunning highwayman.

The young gentleman, who was no descendant of Solomon, or, if he was, did not, any more than some other descendants of wise men, inherit the wisdom of

K 2

his

eareor to
leing
erior
oceed
othuole to

very

ent

er-

, if

red

in;

tly,

and

ho

to

ose

ong

ced

the

s, I

and

offes

orth

hey

nem

for

ame

my

g to

life

pro-

the

cale

nce.

hind

fires

nore

the

his ancestor, greatly approved Wild's ingenuity, and thanking him for his information, declared he would follow his example when he returned into the country; by which means he proposed to save the premium commonly taken for the remittance. Wild had then no more to do but to inform himself rightly of the time of the gentleman's journey, which he did with great certainty, before they separated.

At his arrival in town, he fixed on two whom he regarded as the most resolute of his gang for this enterprize: and accordingly having summoned the principal, or most desperate, as he imagined him, of these two (for he never chose to communicate in the prefence of more than one) he proposed to him the rob-

bing and murdering this gentleman.

Mr Marybone (for that was the gentleman's name to whom he applied) readily agreed to the robbery; but he besitated at the murder. He faid, as to robbery, he had, on much weighing and considering the matter, very well reconciled his conscience to it; for though that noble kind of robbery which was executed on the highway, was from the cowardice of mankind less frequent, yet the baser and meaner species sometimes called cheating, but more commonly known by the name of Robbery within the Law, was in a manner universal. He did not therefore pretend to the reputation of being so much honester than other people; but could by no means fatisfy himself in the commisfion of murder, which was a fin of the most heinous nature, and so immediately prosecuted by God's judgement, that it never passed undiscovered or unpunished.

Wild, with the utmost distain in his countenance, answered as follows: 'Art thou he whom I have selected out of my whole gang for this glorious undertaking, and dost thou cant of God's revenge against murder? You have, it seems, reconciled your conscience (a pretty word) to robbery from its being so common. Is it then the novelty of murder that deters you? Do you imagine that guns, and pistols, and swords, and knives, are the only instruments of death? Look into the world, and see

the numbers whom broken fortunes and broken hearts

hearts bring untimely to the grave. To omit those glorious heroes, who, to their immortal honour, have massacred whole nations, what think you of private persecution, treachery, and flander, by which the very fouls of men are in a manner torn from their bodies? Is it not more generous, nay, more ' good-natured, to send a man to his rest, than after having plundered him of all he hath, or from ma-' lice or malevolence deprived him of his character, to punish him with a languishing death; or, what ' is worse, a languishing life? Murder, therefore, isnot so uncommon as you weakly conceive it, though as you faid of robbery, that more noble kind, which lies within the paw of the law, may be for But this is the most innocent in him who doth it, and the most eligible to him who is to suffer it. Be-' lieve me, lad, the tongue of a viper is less hurtful than that of a flanderer, and the gilded scales of a rattlesnake less dreadful than the purse of the oppressor. Let me therefore hear no more of your fcruples: but consent to my proposal without farther hesitation, unless, like a woman, you are afraid of blooding your cloaths, or, like a fool, are terrified with the apprehensions of being hanged in chains. Take my word for it, you had better be an honest man than half a rogue. Do not think of continuing in my gang without abandoning yourself absolutely to my pleasure; for no man shall ever receive a favour at my hands, who flicks at any thing, or isguided by any other law than that of my will.'

Wild thus ended his speech, which had not the defired effect on Marybone: he agreed to the robbery, but would not undertake the murder, as Wild (who feared that by Marybone's demanding to fearch the gentleman's coat he might hazard suspicion himself); insisted. Marybone was immediately entered by Wild in his Black-book, and was presently after impeached and executed, as a fellow on whom his leader could not place sufficient dependance; thus falling, as many rogues do, a facrifice not to his roguery, but to hiss

conscience.

ind

uld

ry;

um

ien

the

ith

he

en-

in-

ese

re-

ob-

me

5;

ob-

the

for

ted

nd

ne-

by

an-

re-

le;

if-

ous

ge-

ed.

ce,

fe-

ın-

2-

ur

e-

der

nd

in-

fee

en

rts

K₃ CHAP

C H A P. IV.

In which a young hero, of wonderful good promise, makes his first appearance, with many other Great matters.

O his gang, who initiantly received his orders, and instead of hesitating at a single murder, asked if he should blow out the brains of all the passengers, coachman and all. But Wild, whose moderation we have before noted, would not permit him; and therefore having given him an exact description of the devoted person, with his other necessary instructions, he dismissed him, with strictest orders to avoid, if possible,

doing hurt to any other person.

The name of this youth, who will hereafter make fome figure in this history, being the Achates of our Æneas, or rather the Hæphestion of our Alexander, was Fireblood. He had every qualification to make a second rate GREAT MAN; or in other words, he was compleatly equipped for the tool of a real or first-rate GREAT MAN. We shall therefore (which is the properest way of dealing with this kind of GREAT-NESS) describe him negatively, and content ourselves with telling our readers what qualities he had not: in which number were humanity, modesty, and fear, not one grain of any of which was mingled in his whole composition.

We will now leave this youth, who was esteemed the most promising of the whole gang, and whom Wild often declared to be one of the prettiest lads he had ever seen, of which opinion, indeed, were most other people of his acquaintance; we will however leave him at his entrance on this enterprize, and keep our attention fixed on our hero, whom we shall obferve taking large strides towards the summit of human

glory.

Wild, immediately at his return to town, went to pay a visit to Miss Lætitia Snap; for he had that weakness of suffering himself to be enslaved by women, so naturally incident to men of heroic disposi-

tion;

v

f

1

i de ft

N

tion: to say the truth, it might more properly be called a flavery to his own appetite; for could he have fatisfied that, he had not cared three farthings what had become of the little tyrant for whom he profes'd so violent a regard. Here he was informed that Mr Heartfree had been conveyed to Newgate the day before, the writ being then returnable. He was somewhat concerned at this news; not from any compafsion for the misfortunes of Heartfree, whom he hated with fuch inveteracy, that one would have imagined he had suffered the same injuries from him which he had done towards him. His concern therefore had another motive: in fact, he was uneafy at the place of Mr. Heartfree's confinement, as it was to be the scene of his future glory, and where consequently he should be frequently obliged to see a face which hatred, and not shame, made him detest the fight of.

To prevent this, therefore, several methods suggested themselves to him. At first he thought of removing him out of the way by the ordinary method of murder, which he doubted not but Fireblood would be very ready to execute; for that youth had at their last interview, sworn, D—n his eyes, he thought there was no better passime then blowing a man's brains out. But besides the danger of this method, it did not look horrible nor barbarous enough for the last mischief which he should do to Heartfree. Considering, therefore, a little farther with himself, he at length came to a resolution to hang him, if possible,

the very next fessions.

in

ot

le

m

nė

oft

er

ep

b-

IN

to

at

oli-

1;

Now, though the observation, How apt are men to hate those they injure, or how unforgiving they are to injuries they do themselves, be common enough, yet I do not remember to have ever seen the reason of this strange phænomenon, as at first it appears. Know therefore, reader, that with much and severe scruting we have discovered this hatred to be sounded on the passion of sear, and to arise from an apprehension that the person whom we have ourselves greatly injured, will use all possible endeavours to revenge and retaliate the injuries we have done him. An opinion so simply established in bad and great minds (and those who

who confer injuries on others, have seldom very good or mean ones) that no benevolence nor even beneficence on the injured side, can eradicate it. On the contrary, they refer all these acts of kindness to imposture and design of lulling their suspicion, till an opportunity offers of striking a surer and severer blow; and thus while the good man who hath received it hath truly forgotten the injury, the evil mind which did it, hath it in lively and fresh remembrance.

As we scorn to keep any discoveries secret from our readers, whose instruction, as well as diversion, we have greatly considered in this history, we have here digressed somewhat to communicate the following short lesson to those who are simple, and well inclined; Though as a Christian thou art obliged, and we advise thee to forgive thy enemy; NEVER TRUST THE MANWHO HATH REASON TO SUSPECT THAT YOU KNOW THE HATH INJURED YOU.

C H A P. V.

More and more GREATNESS, unparalleled in history or romance.

In order to accomplish this great and noble scheme, which the wast genius of Wild had contrived, the strict necessary step was to regain the considence of Heartfree. But however necessary this was, it seemed to be attended with such insurmountable difficulties, that even our hero for some time despaired of success. He was greatly superior to all mankind in the steadiness of his countenance, but this undertaking seemed to require more of that noble quality than had ever been the portion of a mortal. However, at last he resolved to attempt it, and from his success, I think, we may fairly affert, that what was said by the Latin poet of labour, that it conquers all things, is much more true when applied to impudence.

When he had formed his plan, he went to Newgate, and burst resolutely into the presence of Heartfree, whom he eagerly embraced and kissed; and then, first arraigning his own rathness, and afterwards

lament.

fi

it

01

th

fo

m

la

vi

UI

01

Ve

of

in

far

be

of

ou

w

br

CO

he

pu

de

COI

cer

the

lamenting his unfortunate want of success, he acquainted him with the particulars of what had happened; concealing only that single incident of his attack on the other's wife, and his motive to the undertaking, which he assured Heartfree was a desire to preserve

his effects from a statute of bankruptcy.

The frank openness of this declaration, with the composure of countenance with which it was delivered; his seeming only ruffled by the concern for his friend's misfortune; the probability of truth attending it, joined to the boldness and disinterested appearance of this visit, together with his many professions of immediate fervice, at a time when he could not have the least visible motive from self-love; and above all, his offering him money, the last and surest token of friendship, rushed with such united force on the well-disposed heart, as it is vulgarly called, of this fimple man, that they instantly staggered, and foon fubverted all the determinations he had before made in prejudice of Wild; who perceiving the balance to be turning in his favour, prefently threw in a hundred imprecations on his own folly and ill-advised forwardness to serve his friend, which had thus unhappily produced his ruin; he added as many curses on the Count, whom he vowed to pursue with revenge all over Europe; lastly, he cast in some grains of comfort, assuring Heartfree that his wife was fallen imo the gentlest hands, that she would be carried no farther than Dunkirk, whence the might very eafily be redeemed.

Heartfree, to whom the lightest presumption of his wife's fidelity would have been more delicious than the absolute restoration of all his jewels, and who, indeed, had with the utmost difficulty been brought to entertain the slightest suspicion of her inconstancy, immediately abandoned all distrust of both her and his friend, whose sincerity (luckily for Wild's purpose) seemed to him to depend on the same evidence. He then embraced our hero, who had in his countenance all the symptoms of the deepest concern, and begged him to be comforted; saying, that the intentions, rather than the actions of men, conferred

(1

m

th

th

be

ha

vi

in

for

ala

ha

wi

lib

an

ftr

pro

pro

WO

vai

thi

1pc

. .

+6

· f

F

· t

. C

" C

(W

fi

· f

P

· fo

n

d

ferred obligations; that as to the event of human affairs, it was governed either by chance or some superior agent; that friendship was concerned only in the direction of our designs. And suppose these failed of success, or produced an event never so contrary to their aim, the merit of a good intention was not in the least lessened, but was rather entitled to compassion.

Heartfree, however, was foon curious enough to enquire how Wild had escaped the captivity which his wife then suffered. Here likewise he recounted the whole truth, omitting only the motive to the French captain's cruelty, for which he assigned a very different reason, namely, his attempt to secure Heartfree's jewels. Wild indeed always kept as much truth as was possible in every thing; and this he said was turning the cannon of the enemy upon themselves.

Wild having thus, with admirable and truly laudable conduct, atchieved the first step, began to discourse on the badness of the world: and particularly to blame the severity of creditors, who seldom or never attended to any unfortunate circumstances, but without mercy inflicted confinement on the debtor, whose body the law, with very unjustifiable rigour, delivered into their power. He added, that for his part, he looked on this restraint to be as heavy a punishment as any appointed by law for the greatest offenders. That the loss of liberty was, in his opinion, equal to, if not worse, than the loss of life; that he had always determined, if by any accident or misfortune he had been subjected to the former, he would run the greatest rifque of the latter to rescue himself from it; which, he said, if men did not want resolution, was easy enough; for that it was ridiculous to conceive that two or three men could confine two or three hundred, unless the prisoners were either fools or cowards, especially when they were neither chained nor fettered. He went on in this manner, till perceiving the utmost attention in Heartfree, he ventured to propose to him an endeavour to make his escape, which, he said, might easily be executed; that he would himself raise a party in the prison, and that, if a murder or two should happen in the attempt, he (Heart(Heartfree) might keep from any share, either in the

guilt or in the danger.

r

ıt

г,

is

u-

est

oi-

e;

or

he

ue

nt

u-

ne

rer

ner

e1 ,.

he his

at

at,

he

rt

There is one misfortune which attends all great men and their schemes, viz. That, in order to carry them into execution, they are obliged, in proposing their purpose to their tools, to discover themselves to be of that disposition, in which certain little writers have advised mankind to place no confidence; an advice which hath been fometimes taken. Indeed many inconveniencies arise to the faid great men from these scribblers publishing without restraint their hints or alarms to fociety; and many great and glorious schemes have been thus frustrated; wherefore it were to be wished, that in all well-regulated governments, such liberties should be by some wholesome laws restrained; and all writers inhibited from venting any other infructions to the people than what should be first approved and licensed by the said great men, or their proper instruments or tools; by which means nothing would ever be published but what made for the advancing their most noble projects.

Heartfree, whose suspicions were again raised by this advice, viewing Wild with inconceivable disdain, spoke as follows. There is one thing, the loss of which I should deplore infinitely beyond that of " liberty and of life also, I mean of a good con-' science. A bleffing which he who possesses can never be thoroughly unhappy; for the bitterest po-' tion of life is by this fo sweetened, that it soon be-" comes palatable; whereas without it, the most deli-' cate enjoyments quickly lose all their relish, and life titlelf grows inlipid, or rather nauseous to us. Would 'you then lessen my misfortunes by robbing me of what hath been my only comfort under them, and on which I place my dependence of being relieved ' from them? I have read that Socrates refused to ' fave his life by breaking the laws of his country. ' and departing from his prison, when it was open. Perhaps my virtue would not go fo far; but Heaven ' forbid liberty should have such charms, to tempt ' me to the perpetration of so horrid a crime as murder. As to the poor evalion of committing it by other hands, it might be useful indeed to those who · feek only the escape from temporal punishment, but

can be of no service to excuse me to that Being

whom I chiefly fear offending; nay, it would greatly

aggravate my guilt by so impudent an endeavour to

· impose upon him, and by so wickedly involving others

in my crime. Give me therefore no more advice of

this kind; for this is my great comfort in all my afflictions, that it is in the power of no enemy to rob

me of my conscience, nor will I ever be so much my

own enemy as to injure it.'

Though our hero heard all this with proper contempt, he made no direct answer: but endeavoured to evade his proposal as much as possible, which he did with admirable dexterity: this method of getting tolerably well off, when you are repulsed in your attack on a man's conscience, may be stilled the art of retreating, in which the politician, as well as the general, hath sometimes a wonderful opportunity of dis-

playing his great abilities in his profession.

Wild, having made this admirable retreat, and argued away all defign of involving his friend in the guilt of murder, concluded, however, that he thought him rather too scrupulous in not attempting his escape; and then promising to use all such means as the other would permit, in his fervice, took his leave for the present. Heartfree, having indulged himself an hour with his children, repaired to rest, which he enjoyed quiet and undisturbed; whilst Wild, disdaining repose, fat up all night, confulting how he might bring about the final destruction of his friend, without being beholden to any affiftance from himself; which he now despaired of procuring. With the result of these confultations we shall acquaint our reader in good time; but at present we have matters of much more consequence to relate to him.

C H A P. VI.

The event of Fireblood's adventure, and a treaty of marriage, which might have been concluded either at Smithfield or St James's.

FIREBLOOD returned from his enterprize unfuccessful. The gentleman happened to go home another way than he had intended; so that the whole

defign

q

m

te

H

P

th

W

th

fo

ga

no

ho

« I

' t

· a

· P

rity

like

rob

thei

not

plat

oth

wat

they

they

whil

then

which

grea

to fe

of pr

B

I

defign miscarried. Fireblood had indeed robbed the coach, and had wantonly discharged a pistol into it, which slightly wounded one of the passengers in the arm. The booty he met with was not very considerable, tho' much greater than that with which he acquainted Wild; for of eleven pounds in money, two silver watches, and a wedding-ring. he produced no more than two guineas and the ring, which he protested with numberless oaths was his whole booty. However, when an advertisement of the robbery was published, with a reward promised for the ring and the watches, Fireblood was obliged to consess the whole, and to acquaint our hero where he had pawned the watches; which Wild, taking the full value of them for his pains, restored to the right owner.

He did not fail catechifing his young friend on this occasion. He said, he was sorry to see any of his gang guilty of a breach of honour; that without honour Priggery was at an end; that if a Prig had but honour, he would overlook every vice in the world. But, nevertheless,' said he, 'I will forgive you this time, as you are a hopeful lad; and I hope never afterwards to find you delinquent in this great

" point."

d

e

g

of

if-

nd

he

tht

pe;

ner

the

our

yed

ose,

out

be-

won

con-

me;

nie-

er at

un.

ome

hole

lesign

Wild had now brought his gang to great regularity: he was obeyed and feared by them all. He had likewise established an office, where all men who were robbed, paying the value only (or a little more) of their goods, might have them again. This was of notable use to several persons who had lost pieces of plate they had received from their grand-mothers; to others who had a particular value for certain rings, watches, heads of canes, fnuff-boxes, &c. for which they would not have taken twenty times as much as they were worth, either because they had them a little while or a long time, or that somebody else had them before, or from some other such excellent reason, which often stamps a greater value on a toy, than the great Rubble-boy himself would have the impudence to fet upon it.

By these means, he seemed in so promising a way of procuring a fortune, and was regarded in so thri-

L

13

gr

th

lo

in

rai

of

ma

ing

bul

ha

be

cor

tha

Wil

rec

hill

em

elo

cor

WOI

eve

eloc

har

liter

are

pose

the

flow

fo e

ving a light by all the gentlemen of his acquaintance, as by the keeper and turnkeys of Newgate, by Mr Snap and others of his occupation, that Mr Snap one day, taking Mr Wild the elder aside, very seriously proposed what they had often lightly talked over, a strict union between their families, by marrying his daughter Tishy to our hero. This proposal was very readily accepted by the old gentleman, who

promised to acquaint his son with it.

On the morrow, on which this message was to be delivered, our hero, little dreaming of the happiness which, of its own accord, was advancing so near towards him, had called Fireblood to him; and, after informing the youth of the violence of his passion for the young lady, and assuring him what confidence he reposed in him and his honour, he dispatched him to Miss Tishy with the following letter; which we here insert, not only as we take it to be extremely curious, but to be a much better pattern for that epistolary kind of writing, which is generally called Love-letters, than any to be found in the academy of compliments, and which we challenge all the beaus of our time to excel either in matter or spelling.

" Most deivine and adwhorable creeture,

I DOUBT not but those IIs, briter than the son, which have kindled fuch a flam in my hart, " have likewise the faculty of seeing it. It would " be the hiest preasumption to imagin you eggnorant of my loav. No, Madam, I follemly purtelt, that of all the butys in the universal glob, there is none " kapable of hateracting my Ils like you. Corts and pallaces would be to me deferts without your kum-" pany, and with it a wilderness would have more charins than haven itself. For I hop you will be-" leve me when I sware every place in the univarse is a " haven with you. I am konvinced you must be sen-" fibel of my violent passion for you, which, if I en-" devored to hid it, would be as impossible as for "you, or the fon to hide your buty's. I affure you "I have not slept a wink since I had the hapness of " feeing

"feeing you last: therefore hop you will, out of Kumpassion, let me have the honour of seeing you this afternune; for I am with the greatest adwhoration,

" Most deivine creeture,
" Iour most passionate amirer,
" Adwhorer and slave,
" JOHANATAN WYLD."

If the spelling of this letter be not so strictly orthographical, the reader will be pleased to remember, that fuch a defect might be worthy of censure in a low and scholastic character; but can be no blemish in that fablime greatness, of which we endeavour to raise a compleat idea in this history. In which kind of composition, spelling, or indeed any kind of hu. man literature, hath never been thought a necessary ingredient; for if these fort of great personages can but complot and contrive their noble schemes, and hack and hew mankind fufficiently, there will never be wanting fit and able persons who can spell, to record their praises. Again, if it should be observed, that the stile of this letter doth not exactly correspond with that of our hero's speeches, which we have here recorded, we answer, it is sufficient if in these the hiltorian adheres faithfully to the matter, though he embellithes the diction with some flourithes of his own eloquence, without which the excellent speeches recorded in ancient historians (particularly in Sallust) would have scarce been found in their writings. Nay, even amongst the moderns, famous as they are for elocution, it may be doubted whether those inimitable harangues, published in the monthly Magazines, came literally from the mouths of the Hungos, &c. as they are there inserted, or whether we may not rather suppose some historian of great eloquence hath borrowed the matter only, and adorned it with those rhetorical flowers for which many of the said Hungos are not so extremely eminent.

CHAP.

L z

al

be

efs toter ion

im

ere ous, ind han nich

her

fon, hart, ould erant that

none and kummore Il be-

e is a fen-I en-

for you els of

eeing

C H A P. VII.

Matters preliminary to the marriage between Mr Jonathan Wild and the chaste Lætitia.

D UT to proceed with our history: Fireblood, having received this letter, and promised on his honour, with many voluntary affeverations, to discharge his embassy faithfully, went to visit the fair Lætitia. The lady having opened the letter, and read it, put on an air of disdain, and told Mr Fireblood she could not conceive what Mr Wild meant by troubling her with his impertinence; she begged him to carry the letter back again, faying, had she known from whom it came, the would have been d-d before the had opened it. But with you, young gentleman,' fays the, ' I am not in the least angry. I am rather forry that so pretty a young man should be employed in " fuch an errand.' She accompanied these words with fo tender an accent, and fo wanton a leer, that Fireblood, who was no backward youth, began to take her by the hand, and proceeded fo warmly, that, to imitate his actions with the rapidity of our narration, he in a few minutes ravished this fair creature, or at least would have ravished her, if she had not, by a timely compliance, prevented him.

Fireblood, after he had ravished as much as he could, returned to Wild, and acquainted him, as far as any wife man would, with what had passed; concluding with many praises of the young lady's beauty, with whom, he said, if his honour would have permitted him, he should himself have fallen in love; but, d—n him, if he would not sooner be torn in pieces by wild horses, than even think of injuring his friend. He asserted indeed, and swore so heartily, that had not Wild been so thoroughly convinced of the impregnable chastity of the lady, he might have suspected his success: however, he was, by these means, entirely satisfied of his friend's inclination towards his mistress.

Thus constituted were the love affairs of our hero, when his father brought him Mr Snap's proposal. The reader must know very little of love, or indeed of any thing else, if he requires any information con-

cerning

ce

for

th

in

to

for

he

va

an

of

pa

gr

ole

de

in

pr

to

fol

vi

a!l

re

ev

tle

tee

pa

th

at

cli

th

th

ve.

in

be

fta

Not guilty never sounded sweeter in the ears of a prisoner at the bar, nor the sound of a reprieve to one at the gallows, than did every word of the old gentleman in the ears of our hero. He gave his father full power to treat in his name, and defired nothing more than

expedition.

The old people now met, and Snap, who had information from his daughter of the violent passion of her lover, endeavoured to improve it to the best advantage, and would have not only declined giving her any fortune himself, but have attempted to cheat her of what the owed to the liberality of her relations, particularly of a pint silver caudle-cup, the gift of her grandmother. However, in this the young lady herself afterwards took care to prevent him. As to the old Mr Wild, he did not sufficiently attend to all the designs of Snap, as his faculties were busily employed in designs of his own, to over-reach (or, as others express it, to cheat) the said Mr Snap, by pretending to give his son a whole number for a share, when in reality he was entitled to a third only.

When matters were thus settling between the old solks, the young lady agreed to admit Mr Wild's visits; and, by degrees, began to entertain him with all the shew of affection, which the great natural reserve of her temper, and the greater artificial reserve of her education, would permit. At length, every thing being agreed between their parents, settlements made, and the lady's fortune (to wit, seventeen pounds and nine shillings in money and goods) paid down, the day for their nuptials was fixed, and

they were celebrated accordingly.

Most private histories, as well as comedies, end at this period; the historian and the poet both concluding they have done enough for their hero when they have married him; or initmating rather, that the rest of his life must be a dull calm of happiness, very delightful indeed to pass through, but somewhat insipid to relate; and matrimony in general must, I believe, without any dispute, be allowed to be this state of tranquil felicity, including so little variety,

L 3

that, like Salisbury Plain, it affords only one prospect, a very pleasant one it must be confessed, but the same.

Now, there was all the probability imaginable, that this contract would have proved of such happy note, both from the great accomplishments of the young lady, who was thought to be possessed of every qualification needsary to make the marriage state happy, and from the truly ardent passion of Mr Wild; but whether it was that nature and fortune had great designs for him to execute, and would not suffer his vast abilities to be lost and sunk in the arms of a wife, or whether neither nature nor fortune had any hand in the matter, is a point I will not determine. Certain it is, that this match did not produce that serene state we have mentioned above; but resembled the most turbulent and russed, rather than the most calm sea.

I cannot here omit a conjecture ingenious enough of a friend of mine, who had a long intimacy in the Wild family. He hath often told me he fancied one reason of the disatisfaction which afterwards fell out between Wild and his lady, arose from the number of gallants, to whom she had before marriage granted favours; for, says he, and indeed very probable it is too, the lady might expect from her husband, what the had before received from several, and being angry not to find one man as good as ten, she had, from that indignation, taken those steps which we cannot per-

fectly justify.

From this person I received the following dialogue, which, he assured me, he had overheard, and taken down verbatim. It passed on the day fortnight after

they were married.

C H A P. VIII.

A dialogue matrimonial, which passed between Jonathan Wild Esquire, and Lætitia his wise, on the morning of the day sortnight on which the nuptials were celebrated; which concluded more amicably than those debates generally do.

JONATHAN. MY dear, I wish you would lie a little longer in bed this morning.

LETITIA.

b

fu

m

th

of

fil

ba

cel

be

ate

CO

rea

LETITIA. Indeed I cannot; I am engaged to break-

fast with Jack Strongbow.

JONATHAN. I don't know what Jack Strongbow doth so often at my house. I assure you I am uneasy at it: for though I have no suspicion of your virtue, yet it may injure your reputation in the opinion of my neighbours.

LETITIA. I don't trouble my head about my neighbours; and they shall no more tell me what company

I am to keep, than my husband shall.

Jonathan. A good wife would keep no company

which made her husband uneasy.

LETITIA. You might have found one of those good wives, Sir, if you had pleased, I had no objection to it.

JONATHAN. I thought I had found one in you. -

LETITIA. You did! I am very much obliged to you for thinking me so poor-spirited a creature; but I hope to convince you to the contrary. What, I suppose, you took me for a raw, senseless girl, who knew not what other married women do!

JONATHAN. No matter what I took you for: I

have taken you for better and worse.

LETITIA. And at your own desire too: for, I am sure, you never had mine. I should not have broken my heart if Mr Wild had thought proper to bestow himself on any other more happy woman—Ha, ha.

JONATHAN. I hope, Madam, you don't imagine that was not in my power, or that I married you out

of any kind of necessity.

1

.

e,

n

an

n-

le

4.

LETITIA. O no, Sir, I am convinced there are filly women enough. And far be it from me to accuse you of any necessity for a wife. I believe you could have been very well contented with the state of a batchelor; I have no reason to complain of your necessities: but that, you know, a woman cannot tell beforehand.

JONATHAN. I can't guess what you would infinuate; for I believe no woman had ever less reason to complain of her husband's want of fondness.

LETITIA. Then fome, I am certain, have great reason to complain of the price they give for them.—

But

But I know better things. (These words were spoken with a very great air, and toss of the head.)

JONATHAN. Well, my sweeting, I will make it

impossible to with me more fond .--

LETITIA. Pray, Mr. Wild, none of this nauseous behaviour, nor those odious words—I wish you were fond!—I assure you—I don't know what you would pretend to infinuate of me.—I have no wishes which misbecomes a virtuous woman—No, nor should not, if I had married for love.—And especially now when no body, I am sure, can suspect me of any such thing.—

JONATHAN. If you did not marry for love, why did

you marry?

LATITIA. Because it was convenient, and my pa-

rents forced me.

JONATHAN. I hope, Madam, at least, you will not tell me to my face, you have made your convenience of me.

LETITIA. I have made nothing of you; nor do I defire the honour of making any thing of you.

Jonathan. Yes, you have made a husband of me. LETITIA. No, you made yourself so; for I repeat

JONATHAN. You should think yourself obliged to

me for that defire.

LETITIA. La! Sir, you was not so singular in it. I was not in despair.—I have had other offers, and better too.

JONATHAN. I wish you had accepted them with all

my heart.

LETITIA. I must tell you, Mr Wild, this is a very brutish manner of treating a woman, to whom you have such obligations; but I know how to despise it, and to despise you too for shewing it me. Indeed I am well enough paid for the soolith preference I gave to you. I flattered myself that I should at least have been used with good manners. I thought I had married a gentleman: but I find you every way contemptible, and below my concern.

Jonathan. D-n you, Madam, have not I more reason to complain, when you tell me you married me

for your convenience only?

LETITIA.

n

b

n

fi

D

ev

be

no

I

an

m

be

an

ha

rig

po

be

for

be

LETITIA. Very fine, truly. Is it behaviour worthy a man to swear at a woman? yet why should I mention what comes from a wretch whom I despise?

JONATHAN. Don't repeat that word so often. I despise you as heartily as you can do me. And, to tell you a truth, I married you for my convenience likewise, to satisfy a passion which I have now satisfied, and you may be d—d for any thing I care.

LETITIA. The world shall know how barbarously

I am treated by fuch a villain.

JONATHAN. I need take very little pains to acquaint the world what a b—ch you are, your actions will demonstrate it.

LETITIA. Monster! I would advise you not to depend too much on my sex, and provoke me too far; for I can do you a mischief, and will, if you dare use

me fo, you villain!

Jonathan. Begin whenever you please, Madam; but assure yourself, the moment you lay aside the woman, I will treat you as such no longer; and if the sirst blow is yours, I promise you the last shall be mine.

LETITIA. Use me as you will; but d-n me if ever you shall use me as a woman again; for may I

be cursed, if ever I enter your bed more.

JONATHAN. May I be curfed if that abstinence be not the greatest obligation you can lay upon me; for I assure you faithfully, your person was all I had ever any regard for; and that I now loath and detest, as much as ever I liked it.

LETITIA. It is impossible for two people to agree better; for I always detested your person; and, as for any other regard, you must be convinced I never could

have any for you.

u

ve

ve

r-

re

ne

A.

JONATHAN. Why, then, fince we are come to a right understanding, as we are to live together, suppose we agreed, instead of quarrelling and abusing, to be civil to each other.

LETITIA. With all my heart.

JONATHAN. Let us shake hands then, and henceforwards never live like man and wife; that is, never be loving, nor ever quarrel.

LETITIA.

LETITIA. Agreed.—But pray, Mr Wild, why b—ch? Why did you suffer such a word to escape you?

JONATHAN. It is not worth your remembrance.

LETITIA. You agree I shall converse with whomfoever I please?

JONATHAN. Without controul. And I have the

fame liberty?

LATITIA. When I interfere, may every curse you can wish attend me.

0

h

m

Te

h

pa

of

hi

an

an

ot

th

CO

of

vil

lor

We

fui

dri

COI

fio

to

wa

ed

he

had

fuf

tot

cip:

can with attend me.

JONATHAN. Let us now take a farewell kiss; and may I be hang'd if it is not the sweetest you ever gave me.

LETITIA. But why, b-ch? - Methinks I should

be glad to know why b-ch?

At which words he sprang from the bed, d—ing her temper heartily. She returned it again with equal abuse, which was continued on both sides while he was dressing. However, they agreed to continue stedsalt in this new resolution; and the joy arising on that occasion at length dismissed them pretty chearfully from each other, though Lætitia could not help concluding with the words, Why B—ch.

C H A P. IX.

Observations on the foregoing dialogue, together with a base design on our hero, which must be detested by every lover of GREATNESS.

THUS did this dialogue (which though we have termed it matrimonial, had indeed very little favour of the sweets of matrimony in it) produce at last a resolution more wise than strictly pious, and which, if they could have rigidly adhered to it, might have prevented some unpleasant moments, as well to our hero as to his serene consort; but their hatred was so very great and unaccountable, that they never could bear to see the least composure in one another's countenance, without attempting to russe it. This set them on so many contrivances to plague and vex one another, that as their proximity afforded them such frequent opportunities of executing their malicious purposes,

purposes, they seldom pass'd one easy or quiet day to-

gether.

And this, reader, and no other, is the cause of those many inquietudes, which thou must have observed to disturb the repose of some married couples, who mistake implacable hatred for indifference; for why should Corvinus, who lives in a round of intrigue, and seldom doth, and never willingly would, dally with his wife, endeavour to prevent her from the satisfaction of an intrigue in her turn? Why doth Camilla resuse a more agreeable invitation abroad, only to expose her husband at his own table at home? In short, to mention no more instances, whence can all the quarrels, and jealousies, and jars, proceed, in people who have no love for each other, unless from that noble passion above-mentioned, that desire, according to my Lady Betty Modish, of curing each other of a smile.

We thought proper to give our reader a short taste of the domestic state of our hero, the rather to shew him that great men are subject to the same frailties and inconveniencies in ordinary life, with little men, and that heroes are really of the same species with other human creatures, notwithstanding all the pains they themselves, or their statterers, take to assert the contrary; and that they differ chiefly in the immensity of their greatness, or as the vulgar erroneously call it, villainy. Now, therefore, that we may not dwell too long on low scenes, in a history of this sublime kind, we shall return to actions of a higher note, and more

fuitable to our purpose.

A

e rod - et eh is

When the boy Hymen had, with his lighted torch, driven the boy Cupid out of doors; that is to fay, in common phrase, when the violence of Mr Wild's passion (or rather appetite) for the chaste Lætitia began to abate, he returned to visit his friend Heartfree, who was now in the liberties of the Fleet, and had appeared to the commission of bankruptcy against him. Here he met with a more cold reception than he himself had apprehended. Heartfree had long entertained suspicions of Wild, but these suspicions had from time to time been consounded with circumstances, and principally smothered with that amazing considence which

was indeed the most striking virtue in our hero. Heartfree was unwilling to condemn his friend without certain evidence, and laid hold on every probable semblance to acquit him; but the proposal made at his
last visit had so totally blackened his character in this
poor man's opinion, that it entirely fixed the wavering
scale, and he no longer doubted but that our hero

was one of the greatest villains in the world.

Circumstances of great improbability often escape men who devour a story with greedy ears; the reader therefore, cannot wonder that Heartfree, whose pasfions were so variously concerned, first for the fidelity, and fecondly for the fafety of his wife; and lastly, who was so distracted with doubt concerning the conduct of his friend, should at his first relation pass unobserved the incident of his being committed to the boat by the captain of the privateer, which he had at the time of his telling fo lamely accounted for; but now when Heartfree came to reflect on the whole, and with a high prepossession against Wild, the absurdity of this fact glared in his eyes, and struck him in the most sensible manner. At length a thought of great horror suggested itself to his imagination, and this was, whether the whole was not a fiction, and Wild, who was, as he had learned from his own mouth, equal to any undertaking how black foever, had not spirited away, robbed and murdered his wife.

Intolerable as this apprehension was, he not only turned it round and examined it carefully in his own mind, but acquainted young Friendly with it at their next interview. Friendly, who detested Wild, (from that envy probably, with which these GREAT CHARACTERS naturally inspire low fellows) encouraged these suspicions so much, that Heartfree resolved to attach our hero, and carry him before a magistrate.

This resolution had been some time taken, and Friendly with a warrant and a constable, had with the utmost diligence searched several days for our hero; but whether it was that, in compliance with modern custom, he had retired to spend the honey-

moon

cic

CO

all

MI

tair

leal

had

was

luti

fuse

bloc

left

2

moon with his bride, the only moon indeed in which it is fashionable or customary for the married parties to have any correspondence with each other; or perhaps his habitation might, for particular reasons, be usually kept a secret: like those of some sew great men, whom unfortunately the law hath left out of that reasonable as well as honourable provision, which it hath made for the security of the persons of other great men.

But Wild resolved to perform works of supererogation in the way of honour: and though no hero is
obliged to answer the challenge of my Lord Chief
Justice, or indeed, of any other magistrate, but
may with unblemished reputation slide away from it;
yet such was the bravery, such the greatness, the
magnanimity of Wild, that he appeared in person to
it.

Indeed envy may fay one thing, which may lessen the glory of this action, namely, that the said Mr Wild knew nothing of the said warrant or challenge; and as thou mayst be assured, reader, that the malicious sury will omit nothing which can any ways sully so great a character, so she hath endeavoured to account for this second visit of our hero to his friend Heartfree from a very different motive, than that of asserting his own innocence.

0

0

ly

n

eir

m

ed

to

nd

ith

our

ith

ey-

oon

CHAP. X.

Mr Wild with unprecedented generality visits his friend Heartfree, and the ungrateful reception he met with.

It hath been said then, that Mr Wild, not being able on the strictest examination to find in a certain spot of human nature called his own heart, the least grain of that pitiful low quality called honesty, had resolved, perhaps, a little too generally, that there was no such thing. He therefore imputed the resolution with which Mr Heartfree had so positively resulted to concern himself in murder, either to a fear of bloodying his hands, or the apprehension of a ghost, or lest he should make an additional example in that ex-

M

cellen:

cellent book called, God's Revenge against Murder; and doubted not but he would (at least in his present necessity) agree without scruple to a simple robbery, especially where any considerable booty should be proposed, and the safety of the attack plausibly made appear; which, if he could prevail on him to undertake, he would immediately get him impeached, convicted, and hanged. He no sooner therefore had discharged his duties to Hymen, and heard that Heartfree had procured himself the liberties of the Fleet, than he resolved to visit him, and to propose a robbery with all the allurements of profit, ease, and safety.

This proposal was no sooner made, than it was an-

00

FO

be

an

as

lat

thi

a 1

law

pro

rep

a (

mit

tho

jult

him

for,

fait

to b

s ness

fwered by Heartfree in the following manner:

I might have hoped the answer which I gave to your former advice would have prevented me from the danger of receiving a second affront of this kind. An affront I call it, and furely if it be fo to call a man a villain, it can be no less to " shew him you suppose him one. Indeed, it may be wondered, how any man can arrive at the boldness, I may fay impudence, of first making fuch an overture to another: surely it is seldom done, unless to those who have previously betrayed some symptoms of their own baseness. If I have therefore shewn you any such, these insults are more pardon-" able; but I assure you, if such appear, they discharge all their malignance outwardly, and reflect onot even a shadow within; for to me baseness seems inconsistent with this rule, OF DOING NO OTHER, PERSON AN INJURY FROM ANY MOTIVE OR ON ANY CONSIDERATION WHATEVER. This, Sir, is the rule by which I am determined to walk, onor can that man justify disbelieving me, who will not own he walks not by it himself. But whether it be allowed to me or no, or whether · I feel the good effects of its being practifed by others, I am resolved to maintain it: for surely no man can reap a benefit from my pursuing it equal to the comfort I myself enjoy: for what a ravishing thought! how replete with extasy 4 must the consideration be, that Almighty Goods

e ness is by its own nature engaged to reward me! "How indifferent must such a persuasion make a man to all the occurrences of this life! What trifles must he represent to himself both the enjoyments and the afflictions of this world! How eatily must he acquiesce under missing the former, and how patiently will he submit to the latter, who is conwinced that his failing of a transitory imperfect reward here, is a most certain argument of his obtaining one permanent and compleat hereafter! Dolt thou think then, thou little, paltry, mean animal, (with fuch language did he treat our truly great man) that I will forego fuch coinfortable ex-· pectations for any pitiful reward which thou canst fuggest or promise to me; for that fordid lucre for which all pains and labour are undertaken by the industrious, and all barbarities and iniquities committed by the vile; for a worthless acquisition which fuch as thou art can posses, can give, or 'can take away?' The former part of this speech occasioned much yawning in our tero, but the latter roused his anger; and he was collecting his rage to answer, when Friendly and the constable, who had been summoned by Heartfree, on Wild's first appearance, entered the room, and seized the great man just as his wrath was bursting from his lips.

The dialogue which now enfued, is not worth relating. Wild was foon acquainted with the reason of this rough treatment, and presently conveyed before

a magistrate:

a

)-

57

1=

f-

et

ns

ER.

ir,

k,

ho

ut

er

by

no

it

at

fy

de

els

Notwithstanding the doubts raised by Mr Wild's lawyer on his examination, he insisting that the proceeding was improper, for that a Writ de Homine replegiando should issue, and on the return of that a Capias in Withernam, the justice inclined to commitment, so that Wild was driven to other methods for his defence. He therefore acquainted the justice, that there was a young man likewise with him in the boat, and begged that he might be sent for, which request was accordingly granted, and the faithful Achates (Mr Fireblood) was soon produced to bear testimony for his friend, which he did with

M 2

fo much becoming zeal, and went through his examination with such coherence (though he was forced to collect his evidence from the hints given him by Wild in the presence of the justice and the accusers) that as here was direct evidence against mere presumption, our hero was most honourably acquitted, and poor Heartfree was charged by the justice, the audience, and all others, who afterwards heard the story, with the blackest ingratitude, in attempting to take away the life of a man, to whom he had such

h

fo

ig hi

W

lu

no

pl

alı

wi

hi

fer

on

An

ing

dia

ren

per

WO

this

figu

the

ing

is a

pea

inde

part

figu

to 1

illuf

of t

eminent obligations.

Lest so vast an effort of friendship as this of Fire. blood's should too violently surprise the reader in this degenerate age; it may be proper to inform him, that beside the ties of engagement in the same employ, another nearer and stronger alliance subfisted between our hero and this youth, which latter was just departed from the arms of the lovely Lætitia, when he received her husband's message: an instance which may also serve to justify those strict intercourses of love and acquaintance, which fo commonly subsit in modern history between the husband and gallant, displaying the vast force of friendship, contracted by this more honourable than legal alliance, which is thought to be at present one of the strongest bonds of amity between great men, and the most reputable as well as eafy way to their favour.

Four months had now passed since Heartfree's sirst confinement, and his affairs had begun to wear a more benign aspect: but they were a good deal injured by this attempt on Wild (so dangerous is any attack on a GREAT MAN) several of his neighbours, and particularly one or two of his own trade, industriously endeavouring, from their bitter animosity against such kind of iniquity, to spread and exaggerate his ingratitude as mach as possible; not in the least scrupling, in the violent ardour of their indignation, to add some small circumstances of their own knowledge of the many obligations conferred on Heartfree by Wild. To all these scandals he quietly submitted, comforting himself in the consciousness of

his own innocence, and confiding in the fure friend of jultice to acquit him.

C H A P XI.

A scheme so deeply laid that it shames all the politics of this our age; with digression and sub-digression.

T7ILD having now, to the hatred he bore Heart-VV free on account of those injuries he had done him, an additional spur from this injury received (for fo it appeared to him, who, no more than the most ignorant, confidered how truly he deferved it) applied his utmost industry to accomplish the ruin of one whose very name sounded odious in his ears; when, luckily, a scheme arose in his imagination, which not only promised to effect it securely, but (which pleased him most) by means of the mischief he had already done him; and which would at once load him with the imputation of having committed what he himself had done to him, and would bring on him the severest punishment for a fact, of which he was not only innocent, but had already fo greatly fuffered by. And this was no other than to charge him with having conveyed away his wife, with his most valuable effects, in order to defraud his creditors.

d

a,

ce

les

fift

nt,

by

15

of

as

first

ra

in-

any

urs,

duf-

fity

gge-

the

dig-

OND

on

ietly

is of

his

He no fooner started this thought than he immediately resolved on putting it in execution. What remained to consider was only the Quomodo, and the person or tool to be employed; for the stage of the world differs from that in Drury-Lane principally in this; that whereas on the latter, the hero, or chief figure, is almost continually before your eyes, whilst the under-actors are not feen above once in an evening; now on the former, the hero, or great man, is always behind the curtain, and feldom or never appears, or doth any thing in his own person. He doth indeed in this Grand Drama, rather perform the part of the Prompter, and doth instruct the well-drest figures, who are firutting in public on the stage, what to fay and do. To fay the truth, a puppet show will illustrate our meaning better, where it is the master of the show (the great man) who dances and moves,

M 3

every

whatever other potentate, alias puppet, which we behold on the stage; but he himself wisely keeps out of sight; for should he once appear, the whole motion would be at an end. Not that any one is ignorant of his being there, or supposes that the puppets are not mere sticks of wood, and he himself the sole mover; but as this (though every one knows it) doth not appear visibly, i. e. to their eyes, no one is ashamed of consenting to be imposed upon; of helping on the Drama, by calling the several sticks or puppets by the names which the master hath allotted to them, and by assigning to each the character which the great man is pleased they shall move in, or rather in which

he himself is pleased to move them.

It wouldbe to suppose thee, gentle reader, one of very little knowledge in the world, to imagine thou hast never seen some of these puppet shows, which are fo frequently acted on the great stage. But though thou shouldst have resided all thy days in those remote parts of this island, which great men seldom visit; yet, if thou halt any penetration, thou must have had some occasions to admire both the solemnity of countenance in the actor, and the gravity in the spectator, while some of those farces are carried on, which are acted almost daily in every village in the kingdom. He must have a very despicable opinion of mankind indeed who can conceive them to be imposed on as often as they appear to be fo. The truth is, they are in the same situation with the readers of Romances; who, though they know the whole to be one entire fiction, nevertheless agree to be deceived; and as these find amusement, so do the others find ease and convenience in this concurrence. But this being a sub-digression, I return to my digression.

A GREAT MAN ought to do his business by others; to employ hands, as we have before said, to his purposes, and keep himself as much behind the curtain as possible; and though it must be acknowledged that two very great men, whose names will be both recorded in history, did in those latter times, come forth themselves on the stage; and did hack and hew,

and

1

1

b

f

h

f

tl

W

ba

lit

fo

pr

ag

di

The

ate

bu

· F

th

and lay each other most cruelly open to the diversion of the spectators; yet this must be mentioned rather as an example of avoidance, than imitation, and is to be ascribed to the number of those instances which serve to evince the truth of those maxims: Nemo mortalium omnibus boris sapit. Ira suror brevis est, &c.

C H A P. XII.

New instances of Friendly's folly, &c.

n

it

h

e

ou

ch

gh

ote

it;

ad

n-

or,

are

m.

ind

as

her

Ro-

one

and

ease

eing

ers;

our-

tain

hat

re-

ome

ew,

nd

To return to my history, which, having rested itself a little, is now ready to proceed on its journey: Fireblood was the person chosen by Wildfor this service. He had, on a late occasion, experienced the talents of this youth for a good round perjury. He immediately, therefore, found him out, and proposed it to him: when receiving his instant affent, they consulted together, and soon framed an evidence, which, being communicated to one of the most bitter and severe creditors of Heartsree, by him laid before a magistrate, and attested by the oath of Fireblood, the justice granted his warrant; and Heartsree was accordingly apprehended and brought before him.

When the officers came for this poor wretch, they found him meanly diverting himself with his little children, the younger of whom fat on his knees, and the elder was playing at a fittle distance from him with Friendly. One of the officers, who was a very good fort of a man, but one very laudably severe in his office, after acquainting Heartfree with his errand, bade him come along and be d-n'd, and leave those little bastards, for io, he said, he supposed they were, for a legacy to the parish. Heartfree was much surprifed at hearing there was a warrant for felony against him; but he shewed less concern than Friendly did in his countenance. The elder daughter, when The saw the officer lay hold on her father, immediately quitted her play, and running to him, and bursting into tears, cried out : 'You shall not hurt 'poor Papa.' One of the other ruffians offered to take the little one rudely from his knees; but Heartfree flarted.

started up, and, catching the fellow by the collar, dashed his head so violently against the wall, that, had he had any brains, he might possibly have lost them by the blow.

The officer, like most of those heroic spirits who infult men in advertity, had some prudence mixt with his zeal for justice. Seeing, therefore, this rough treatment of his companion, he began to pursue more gentle methods, and very civilly defired Mr Heartfree to go with him, feeing he was an officer, and obliged to execute his warrant; that he was forry for his misfortune, and hoped he would be acquitted. The other answered, he should patiently submit to the laws of his country, and would attend him whither he was ordered to conduct him: then, taking leave of his children with a tender kifs, he recommended them to the care of Friendly; who promised to fee them fafe home, and then to attend him at the justice's, whose name and abode he had learnt of the constable.

Friendly arrived at the magistrate's house just as that gentleman had figned the mittimus against his friend; for the evidence of Fireblood was so clear and strong, and the justice was so incensed against Heartfree, and so convinced of his guilt, that he would hardly hear him speak in his own defence, which the reader, perhaps, when he hears the evidence against him, will be less inclined to censure: For this witness deposed, 'that he had been, by ' Heartfree himself, employed to carry the orders of embezzling to Wild, in order to be delivered to his wife; that he had been afterwards present with Wild and her at the inn, when they took coach for Harwich, where she shewed him the casket of jewels, and desired him to tell her husband, that the had fully executed his command; and this · he swore to have been done after Heartfree had notice of the commission, and in order to bring it within that time, Fireblood, as well as Wild, fwore that Mrs Heartfree lay several days concealed at Wild's house before her departure for Holland.'

l

h

A

fi

tl

h

b

tl

a

h

When Friendly found the justice obdurate, and that all he could fay had no effect, nor was it any way possible for Heartfree to escape being committed to Newgare, he resolved to accompany him thither; where, when they arrived, the turnkey would have confined Heartfree (he having no money) amongst the common felons; but Friendly would not permit it, and advanced every shilling he had in his pocket, to procure a room in the Press-yard for his friend, which, indeed, through the humanity of the keeper, he did at a cheap rate.

d

r

0

J-

d

ne

ne

as

is

ar

nft

he

ce,

VI-

e:

by

of

to

ith

ch

ket

nd,

his

10-

wi-

ore

at

hen

They spent that day together, and in the evening, the prisoner dismissed his friend, desiring him, after many thanks for his fidelity, to be comforted on his account. I know not,' fays he, ' how far the malice of my enemy may prevail; but whatever my fufferings are, I am convinced my innocence will fomewhere be rewarded. If, therefore, any fatal accident should happen to me, (for he who is in the hands of perjury, may apprehend the worst) my "dear Friendly, be a father to my poor children." At which words the tears gushed from his eyes. The other begged him not to admit any fuch apprehenfions; for that he would employ his utmost diligence in his service, and doubted not but to subvert any villainous design laid for his destruction, and to make his innocence appear to the world as white as it was in his opinion.

We cannot help mentioning a circumstance here, though we doubt it will appear very unnatural and incredible to our reader; which is, that, notwithstanding the former character and behaviour of Heartfree, this story of his embezzling was so far from furprizing his neighbours, that many of them declared they expected no better from him. Some were affured he could pay forty thillings in the pound, if he would. Others had overheard hints formerly pass between him and Mrs Heartfree, which had given them fuspicions. And, what is most astonishing of all is, that many of those who had before centured him for an extravagant heedless fool, now no less

confi-

confidently abused him for a cunning, tricking, ava-

C H A P. XIII.

which the the second of the se

Something concerning Fireblood, which will surprize: and fomewhat touching one of the Miss Snaps, which will greatly concern the reader.

OWEVER, notwithstanding all these censures abroad, and in despight of all his misfortunes. at home, Heartfree in Newgate enjoyed a quiet, undisturbed repose; while our hero, nobly disdaining rest, lay sleepless all night; partly from the apprehensions of Mrs Heartfree's return before he had executed his scheme; and partly from a suspicion lest Fireblood should betray him; of whose infidelity he had, nevertheless, no other cause to maintain any fear, but from his knowing him to be an accomplished raical, as the vulgar term it, a complete GREAT Man in our language. And indeed, to confels the truth, these doubts were not without some foundation; for the very same thought unluckily entered the head of that noble youth, who confidered, whether he might not possibly fell himself for some advantage to the other fide, as he had yet no promife from Wild; but this was, by the fagacity of the latter, prevented in the morning with a profusion of promises, which shewed him to be of the most generous temper in the world, with which Fireblood was extremely well fatisfied; and made use of so many protestations of his faithfulness, that he convinced Wild of the justice of his fuspicions. With the state of the state of

At this time an accident happened, which, though it did not immediately affect our hero, we cannot avoid relating, as it occasioned great confusion in his family, as well as in the family of Snap. It is, indeed, a calamity highly to be lamented, when it stains untainted blood, and happens to an honourable house. An injury never to be repaired. A blot never to be wiped out. A fore never to be healed. To detain my reader no longer: Miss Theodosia Snap was now safely delivered of a male infant, the product of an safely delivered of a male infant, the product of an

amour

am

tuo

Mr

VOI

nev

gno

con

wit

cha

fhe

ma

tion

VOV

Th

tha

her

for

den

he

The

he

tow

ner

an

for

ing

thr

the

her

lad

gle

in h

who

felt

hav

tren

Curi

the

Who

P

amour which that beautiful (O that I could fay, virtuous) creature had with the Count.

Mr Wild and his lady were at breakfast, when Mr Snap, with all the agonies of despair both in his voice and countenance, brought them this melancholy news. Our hero, who had (as we have faid) wonderful good nature when his greatness or interest was not concerned, instead of reviling his fister-in-law, asked with a smile: 'Who was the father?' But the chaste Lætitia, we repeat the chaste, for well did the now deferve that epithet, received it in another manner. She fell into the utmost fury at the relation, reviled her fifter in the bitteft terms, and rowed the would never fee nor speak to her more. Then burst into tears, and lamented over her father, that fuch dishonour should ever happen to him and herself. At length she fell severely on her husband, for the light treatment which he gave this fatal accident. She told him, he was unworthy of the honour he enjoyed, of marrying into a chaste family. That the looked on it as an affront to her virtue. That if he had married one of the naughty huslies of the town, he could have behaved to her in no other manner. She concluded, with defiring her father to make an example of the flut, and to turn her out of doors; for that the would not otherwise enter his house, being resolved never to set her foot within the same threshold with the trollop, whom she detested so much the more, because (which was perhaps true) she was her own fifter.

.

d

it

10-

14

d

he

n;

ad

he.

to

d;

ed

ch

he

fa-

his

of

gh

not

his in-

ins

se.

be

ain

WC

an

ur

So violent, and indeed so outrageous was this chaste lady's love of virtue, that she could not forgive a single slip (indeed the only one Theodosia had ever made), in her own sister, in a sister who loved her, and to whom she owed a thousand obligations.

Perhaps the severity of Mr Snap, who greatly selt the injury done to the honour of his family, would have relented, had not the parish officers been extremely pressing on this occasion, and, for want of security, conveyed the unhappy young lady to a place, the name of which, for the honour of the Snaps, to whom our hero was so nearly allied, we bury in eter-

nal

nal oblivion; where the fuffered so much correction for her crime, that the good-natured reader of the male-kind may be inclined to compassionate her, at least to imagine she was sufficiently punished for a fault, which, with submission to the chaste Lætitia, and all other strictly virtuous ladies, it should be either less criminal in a woman to commit, or more so in a man to solicit her to it.

But to return to our hero, who was a living and strong instance, that human greatness and happiness are not always inseparable. He was under a continual alarm of frights, and fears, and jealousies. He thought every man he beheld wore a knife for his throat, and a pair of scissars for his purse. As for his own gang particularly, he was thoroughly convinced there was not a fingle man amongst them, who would not, for the value of five shillings, bring him to the gallows. These apprehensions so con-Rantly broke his rest, and kept him so assiduously on his guard, to frustrate and circumvent any designs which might be forming against him; that his condition, to any other than the glorious eye of ambition, might seem rather deplorable, than the object of envy or defire.

E

. 1

the i

4 of

e l

'af

g b

is

bab

C H A P. XIV.

In which our Hero makes a speech well worthy to be celebrated; and the behaviour of one of the gang perhaps more unnatural than any other part of this history.

THERE was in the gang a man named Bluefkin; one of those merchants who trade in dead
oxen, sheep, &c. in short, what the vulgar call a
Butcher. This gentleman had two qualities of a great
man, viz. undaunted courage, and an absolute contempt of those ridiculous distinctions of meum and
tuum, which would cause endless disputes, did not the
law happily decide them by converting both into
suum. The common form of exchanging property
by trade seemed to him too tedious: he therefore refolved to quit the mercantile profession, and, falling
acquainted with some of Mr Wild's people, he provided

which he behaved for some time with great decency and order, and submitted to accept such there of the booty with the rest, as our hero allotted him.

But this subserviency agreed ill with his temper; for we should have before remembered a third heroic quality, namely, ambition, which was no inconsiderable part of his composition; one day, therefore, having robbed a gentleman at Windsor of a gold watch; which, on its being advertised in the newspaper, with a considerable reward, was demanded of him by Wild,

he peremptorily refused to deliver it.

d

is

1.

le

is

10

n-

ho

ng

on-

on

gns

on-

bi-

ject

cele-

haps

lue-

dead

Il a

rreat

cont

and

t the

into

perig

e re-

Illing

pro-

vided

vided

'How, Mr Blueskin!' fays Wild, 'you will not deliver the watch?' 'No, Mr Wild,' answered he; I have taken it, and will keep it; or, if I dispose of it, I will dispose of it myself, and keep the money ' for which I fell it .' 'Sure,' replied Wild, ' you have onot the affurance to pretend you have any property or right in this watch?' 'I am certain,' returned Blueskin, 'whether I have any right in it or no, you ' can prove none.' 'I will undertake,' cries the other, to shew I have an absolute right to it, and that by the laws of our gang, of which I am providentially at the head.' I know not who put you at the head of it,' cries Blueskin; but those who did, certainly did it for their own good, that you might conduct them the better in their robberies, inform them of the richest booties, prevent surprizes, pack juries, bribe evidence, and so contribute to their benefit and ' fafety; and not to convert all their labour and ha-' zard to your own benefit and advantage.' 'You ' are greatly mistaken, Sir,' answered Wild; 'you are talking of a legal fociety, where the chief magistrate is always chosen for the public good, which, as we fee in all the legal societies of the world, he confantly confults, daily contributing, by his superior 'skill, to their prosperity, and not facrificing their good to his own wealth, or pleasure, or humour: but in an illegal fociety or gang, as this of ours, it 'is otherwise; for who would be at the head of a gang, unless for his own interest? And without a head, wow and place

head, you know, you cannot subsist. Nothing but a head, and obedience to that head, can preserve a gang a moment from destruction. It is absolutely better for you to content yourselves with a mode. * rate reward, and enjoy that in fafety at the disposal of your chief, than to engross the whole with the hazard to which you will be liable without his protection. And furely, there is none in the whole gang, who hath less reason to complain than you; you have tasted of my favours; witness that piece of ribbond you wear in your hat, with which I dubbed you captain .- Therefore, pray, captain, deliver the watch.' D-n your cajoling,' fays Blueskin: Do you think I value myself on this bit of ribbon, which I could have bought myself for fixpence, and have worn without your leave? Do you imagine I think myself a captain, because you, whom I know not empowered to make one, call me fo? . The name of captain is but a shadow: the men and the falary are the fubstance: and I am not to be bubbled with a shadow. I will be called captain no. longer, and he who flatters me by that name, I · shall think affronts me, and I will knock him down, " I affure you.'-- Did ever man talk fo unreason-· ably?' cries Wild. ' Are you not respected as a * captain by the whole gang fince, my dubbing you fo! But it is the shadow only, it seems; and you will knock a man down for affronting you, who calls you captain! Might not a man as reasonably tell a ' minister of state: 'Sir, you have given me the shadow only. The ribbon or the bauble, that you " gave me, implies that I have either fignalized my-" felf, by some great action, for the benefit and glory of my country; or at least that I am descended from those who have done so. I know myself to be a " scoundrel, and so have been those sew ancestors I can remember, or have ever heard of. Therefore I am refolved to knock the first man down, who calls " me Sir, or Right honourable.' But all great and wife men think themselves sufficiently repaid by what procures them honour and precedence in the gang, without

ly e

hi

af

W

bu

pi

an

on

Ou

Wa

for

Ne

had

wh

mil

Blu

and

nan

wit

whi

judg

without enquiring into substance; nay, if a title, or a feather, be equal to this purpose, they are substance, and not mere shadows. But I have not time to argue with you at present, so give me the watch without any more deliberation.' I am no more a friend to deliberation than yourfelf,' answered Blueikin, 'and fo I tell you once for all, by G- I never will give you the watch, no, nor will I ever here-' after furrender any part of my booty. I won it, and I will wear it. Take your pistols yourself, and go out on the highway, and don't lazily think to fatten yourself with the dangers and pains of other people.' At which words he departed in a fierce mood, and repaired to the tavern used by the gang, where he had appointed to meet some of his acquaintance, whom he informed of what had passed between him and Wild, and advised them all to follow his example; which they all readily agreed to, and Mr Wild's d-tion was the universal toast; in drinking bumpers to which they had finished a large bowl of punch, when a constable, with a numerous attendance, and Wild at their head, extered the room, and feized on Bluefkin, whom his companions, when they faw our hero, did not dare attempt to rescue. The watch was found upon him, which, together with Wild's information, was more than sufficient to commit him to Newgate.

.

u

m

1

nd

be

no.

I

n,

n-

a

ou

rou

alls

lla

ha-

you

my-

OLA

rom

be a

rs I

re I

calls

and

what

ang,

Juon

In the evening, Wild, and the rest of those who had been drinking with Blueskin, met at the tavern, where nothing was to be seen but the prosoundest sub mission to their leader. They vilified and abused Blueskin as much as they had before abused our hero, and now repeated the same toast, only changing the name of Wild into that of Blueskin. All agreeing with Wild, that the watch found in his pocket, and which must be a fatal evidence against him, was a just

judgment on his disobedience and revolt.

Thus did this Great Man, by a resolute and timely example (for he went directly to the justice when Blueskin left him) quell one of the most dangerous

N 2

conspiracies which could possibly arise in a gang; and which, had it been permitted one day's growth, would inevitably have ended in his destruction; so much doth it behove all great men to be eternally on their guard, and expeditious in the execution of their purposes; while none but the weak and honest can indulge them-

felves in remissness or repose.

The Achates, Fireblood had been present at both these meetings; but though he had a little too hastily concurred in curfing his friend, and in vowing his perdition; yet now he faw all that scheme dissolved, he returned to his integrity; of which he gave an incontestable proof, by informing Wild of the measures which had been concerted against him. In which, he faid, he had pretended to acquiesce, in order the better to betray them; but this, as he afterwards confessed on his death-bed, at Tyburn, was only a copy of his countenance: for that he was, at that time, as fincere. and hearty in opposition to Wild as any of his com-

panions.

Our hero received Fireblood's information with a very placid countenance. He faid, as the gang had feen their errors, and repented, nothing was more noble than forgiveness. But though he was pleased modestly to ascribe this to his lenity, it really arose from much more noble and political principles. He considered that it would be dangerous to attempt the punishment of so many; besides, he flattered himself that fear would keep them in order; and indeed Fireblood had told him nothing more than he knew before, viz. that they were all complete Prigs, whom he was to govern by their fears, and in whom he was to place no more confidence than was necessary, and to watch them with the utmost caution and circumspection; for a rogue, he wisely said, like gunpowder, must be used with caution; fince both are altogether as liable to blow up the party himself who uses them, as to execute his mischievous purposes against some other person or animal.

We will now repair to Newgate, it being the place where most of the great men of this history are hastening as fast as possible; and, to confess the truth, it is a calle very far from being an improper, or milbecoming habitation for any great man whatever. And as this scene will continue during the residue of our history, we shall open it with a new book; and shall, therefore, take this opportunity of closing our third.

THE REAL PROPERTY.

here were the second of the second of the second

a like and the ant his end incests been not been

the survival anger. He silver to a serior in more

THE DANK THE NUMBER

Control of the Contro

and about the containing the province a look of their

clears his william conversation with the state

determ terms in the property of the property

e

d

is

9-

bi

re

ed

le

le

he

elf

re-

e-

he

to

to

ec:

er,

her

m,

me

ace

en-

ing

Alle and a series of the serie

HISTORY

OFTHE

L I F E

OF THE LATE

Mr JONATHAN WILD, THE GREAT.

h

fe

lu

th

h

ar

' D

n

tl!

' m

· ki

. 0

W

· y

BOOK IV.

C H A P. I.

A sentiment of the Ordinary's, worthy to be written in letters of gold; a very extraordinary instance of folly in Friendly; and a dreadful accident that befel our hero.

before his frequent conversation with his children, and other instances of a good heart, which betrayed themselves in his actions and conversation, created an opinion in all about him that he was one of the silliest fellows in the universe. The ordinary himself, a very sagacious, as well as very worthy person, declared that he was a cursed rogue, but no conjurer.

What indeed might induce the former, i. e. the roguish part of this opinion in the ordinary was a wicked sentiment which Heartfree one day disclosed in conversation, and which we, who are truly orthodox, will not pretend to justify, 'that he believed a sincere 'Turk would be saved.' To this, the good man, with becoming zeal and indignation, answered, 'I know not what

what may become of a fincere Turk, but if this be your persuasion, I pronounce it impossible you should be faved. No, Sir, so far from a fincere Turk's being within the pale of salvation, neither will any sincere Presbyterian, Anabaptist, nor Quaker whatever, be faved.'

But neither did the one or the other part of this character prevail on Friendly to abandon his old master. He spent his whole time with him, except only those hours when he was absent for his sake, in procuring evidence for him against his trial, which was now shortly to come on. Indeed this young man was the only comfort, besides a clear conscience, and the hopes beyond the grave, which this poor wretch had; for the fight of his children was like one of those alluring pleasures which men in some diseases indulge themselves often fatally in, which at once flatter and

heighten their malady.

te

il-

rt,

-75

he

he

ry

ie,

he

2

in

OX,

ere

ith

ot

at

Friendly being one day present while Heartfree was, with tears in his eyes, embracing his eldest daughter, and lamenting the hard fate to which he feared he would be obliged to leave her, spoke to him thus. have long observed with admiration the magnanimity with which you go thro' your own misfortunes, and the steady countenance with which you look on death. I have observed that all your agonies arise from the thoughts of parting with your children, and of leaving them in a distressed condition; now, though I hope all your fears will prove ill-grounded, ' yet, that I may relieve you as much as possible from them, be affured, that as nothing can give me more real misery, than to observe so tender and loving a concern in a master, to whose goodness I owe so many obligations, and whom I so sincerely love, so ' nothing can afford me equal pleasure with my contributing to lessen or to remove it. Be convinced, therefore, if you can place any confidence in my pro-' mise, that I will employ my little fortune, which you know to be not entirely inconsiderable, in the support of this your little family. Should any misfortune, which I pray Heaven avert, happen to you before you have better provided for these little ones, I will

myself their father, nor shall either of them ever know distress, if it be any way in my power to prevent it. Your younger daughter I will provide for, and as for my little prattler, your elder, as I never yet thought of any woman for a wife, I will receive her as such at your hands; nor will I ever relinquish her for another.' Heartfree flew to his friend, and embraced him with raptures of acknowledgment. He vowed to him that he had eased every anxious thought of his mind but one, and that he must carry with him out of this world. 'O Friendly,' cried he, 'it is my concern for that best of women, whom I hate myfelf for having ever censured in my opinion. O · Friendly, thou didit know her goodness, yet, sure · her perfect character none but myself was ever acquinted with. She had every perfection both of mind and body, which Heaven hath indulged to her whole fex, and possessed all in a higher excellence than nature ever indulged to another in any fingle virtue. Can I bear the loss of fuch a woman? Can I bear the apprehensions of what mischiefs that vil-· lain may have done to her, of which death is perhaps the lightest?' Friendly gently interrupted him as foon as he saw an opportunity, endeavouring to comfort him on this head likewise, by magnifying every circumstance which could possibly afford any hope of

th

lin

th

di

qı

On

wh

foi

fee

wh

loo

bot

nec

ther

and

incl

Blu

the

faw

deed

hero

purp

fully

len a

after

conte

him

unim

miffig

By this kind of behaviour, in which the young man exemplified so uncommon an height of friendship, he had soon obtained in the castle the character of as odd and filly a fellow as his master. Indeed, they were both the by-word, laughing stock, and contempt of

the whole place.

The sessions now came on at the Old Baily. The grand jury at Hicks's-hall had found the bill of indictment against Heartfree, and on the second day of the session he was brought to his trial; where, notwithstanding the utmost efforts of Friendly, and of the honest old semale servant, the circumstances of the sad corroborating the evidence of Fireblood, as well as that of Wild, who counterseited the most artful reluctance at appearing against his old friend Heartfree, the jury sound the prisoner guilty.

Wild had now accomplished his scheme; for as to what remained, it was certainly unavoidable, seeing that Heartfree was entirely void of interest with the great, and was besides convicted on a statute, the in-

fringers of which could hope no pardon.

15

of

ın

he

bb

of

he

a-

he

th.

10-

act

25

ac.

he

111

The catastrophe, to which our hero had reduced this wretch, was so wonderful an effort of greatness, that it probably made Fortune envious of her own darking; but whether it was from this envy, or only from that known inconstancy and weakness so often and judiciously remarked in that lady's temper, who frequently lifts men to the summit of human greatness, only

ut lapsu graviore ruant;

certain it is, the now began to meditate mischief against Wild, who feems to have come to that period, at which all heroes have arrived, and which she was refolved they never should transcend. In short, there feems to be a certain measure of mischief and iniquity, which every great man is to fill up, and then fortune looks on him of no more use than a silk-worm, whose bottom is spun, and deserts him. Mr Blueskin was convicted the same day of robbery, by our hero; an unkindness, which tho' he had drawn on himself, and necessitated him to, he took greatly amis; as Wild therefore was standing near him, with that difregard and indifference which great men are too carelessly inclined to have for those whom they have ruined: Blueskin privily drawing a knife, thrust the same into the body of our hero with fuch violence, that all who faw it concluded he had done his business. And indeed, had not fortune, not fo much out of love to our hero, as from a fixed resolution to accomplish a certain purpose, of which we have formerly given a hint, carefully placed his guts out of the way, he must have fallen a facrifice to the wrath of his enemy, which, as he afterwards faid, he did not deserve; for had he been contented to have robbed and only submitted to give him the booty, he might have still continued safe and unimpeached in the gang; but fo it was, that the knife milling those noble parts (the noblest of many) the

guts, perforated only the hollow of his belly, and cauted no other harm than an immoderate effusion of blood, of which, though it at present weakened him, he soon after recovered.

This accident, however, was in the end attended with worse consequences: for, as very few people (those greatest of all men, absolute princes, excepted) attempt to cut the thread of human life, like the fatal filters, merely out of wantonness and for their diversion, but rather by fo doing, propose to themselves the acquisition of some future good, or the avenging some past evil; and as the former of these motives did not appear probable, it put inquisitive persons on examining into the latter. Now, as the valt schemes of Wild, when they were discovered, however great in their nature, seemed to some persons like the projects of most other such persons rather to be calculated for the glory of the great man himself, than to redound to the general good of society; designs began to be laid by several of those who thought it principally their duty, to put a stop to the future progress of our hero, and a learned judge particularly, a great enemy to this kind of greatness, procured a clause in an act of parliament as a trap for Wild, which he foon after fell into. By this law it was made capital in a Prig to steal with the hands of other people. A law fo plainly calculated for the destruction of all Priggish greatness, that it was indeed impossible for our hero to avoid it.

C H A P. II.

A short hint concerning popular ingratitude. Mr Wild's arrival in the castle, with other occurrences to be found in no other history.

I F we had any leifure, we would here digress a little on that ingratitude, which so many writers have observed to spring up in the people in all free governments towards their great men; who, while they have been consulting the good of the public, by raising their own greatness, in which the whole body (as the kingdom of France thinks itself in the glory of their grand monarch)

time the this nary ferve

whe men for a recoung was by n him to g hifto pene

with felf i datic if he was reful on a for l

him,

and

mucl dance tion have ther

Rody

Turpi more fult

fons.

monarch) was so deeply concerned, have been sometimes sacrificed by those very people for whose glory the said great men were so industriously at work: and this from a soolish zeal for a certain ridiculous imaginary thing called Liberty, to which great men are ob-

ferved to have a great animofity.

t

a-

oft

ry

e-

e-

a

nd

nt

By

he

ed

as

tle

ve

n-

ve

eir

gnd

b)

This law had been promulgated a very little time, when Mr Wild, having received from some dutiful members of the gang, a valuable piece of goods, did, for a consideration somewhat short of its original price, reconvey it to the right owner; for which fact being ungratefully informed against by the said owner, he was surprized in his own house, and being overpowered by numbers, was hurried before a magistrate, and by him committed to that castle, which, suitable as it is to greatness, we do not chuse to name too often in our history, and where many great men, at this time, happened to be assembled.

The governor, or as the law more honourably calls him, keeper of this castle, was Mr Wild's old friend and acquaintance. This made the latter greatly satisfied with the place of his confinement, as he promised himfelf not only a kind reception and handsome accommodation there, but even to obtain his liberty from him, if he thought it necessary to desire it: but alas! he was deceived, his old friend knew him no longer, and resused to see him, and the lieutenant-governor insisted on as high garnish for setters, and as exorbitant a price for lodging, as if he had had a fine gentleman in custody for murder, or any other genteel crime.

To confess a melancholy truth, it is a circumstance much to be lamented, that there is no absolute dependance on the friendship of great men. An observation which hath been frequently made by those who have lived in courts of in Newgate, or in any o-

ther place fet apart for the habitation of such per-

The second day of his confinement he was greatly surprized at receiving a visit from his wife; and much more so, when instead of a countenance ready to infult him, the only motive to which he could ascribe

fr

hi

fe

ut

W

fai

fic

of

th

do

de

car

hin

fin

fay

a fi

rep

the

hac

not

gen

tor

inte

whi

him

out

Beir

hap

of t

as

· thee

her presence, he saw the tears trickling down her lovely cheeks. He embraced her with the utmost marks of affection, and declared he could hardly regret his confinement, fince it had produced fuch an instance of the happiness he enjoyed in her, whose fidelity to him on this occasion would, he believed, make him the envy of most husbands, even in Newgate. He then begged her to dry her eyes, and be comforted: for that matters might go better with him than the expected. 'No, no,' fays she, 'I am certain you will be found guilty Death. I knew what it would always come to. I told you it was impossible to carry on fuch a trade long; but you would not be advised, and now you see the consequence, now you repent when it is too late. All the comfort I shall have when you are nubbed * is, that I gave you good advice. If you had always gone out by your-· felf, as I would have had you, you might have robbed on to the end of the chapter; but you was wifer than all the world, or rather lazier, and fee what your laziness is come to-to the cheat +, for thither you will go now, that's infallible. And a just judge ment on you for following your headstrong will; . I am the only person to be pitied, poor I, who fhall be feandalized for your fault. There goes the whose husband was hanged: methinks I hear them crying fo already.' At which words she burst into tears. He could not then forbear chiding her for this unnecessary concern on his account, and begged her not to trouble him any more. She answered with some Spirit: On your account, and be d-d to you! No, if the old cull of a justice had not fent me hither, I · believe it would have been long enough before! chould have come hither to fee after you: d-n me, I am committed for the filing-lay t, man, and we . hall be both nubbed together. I' faith, my dear, it almost makes me amends for being nubbed myself to have the pleasure of feeing thee nubbed too.' 'Indeed, my dear, answered Wild, ' it is what I have long wished for thee; but I do not defire to bear The cant word for hanging. † The gallows. † Picking

thee company, and I have still hopes to have the pleasure of seeing you go without me; at least I will have the pleasure to be rid of you now.' And so saying, he seized her by the waist, and with strong arm slung her out of the room; but not before she had with her nails lest a bloody memorial on his cheek:

and thus this fond couple parted.

at

er

ho

The

em

nto

his

her

ome

No,

rel

me,

we.

ear,

felf

In-

ave

pear

king

thee

Wild had scarce recovered himself from the uneafiness into which this unwelcome visit, proceeding from the disagreeable fondness of his wife, had thrown him, than the faithful Achates appeared. The prefence of this youth was indeed a cordial to his spirits, He received him with open arms, and expressed the utmost fatisfaction in the fidelity of his friendship, which fo far exceeded the fashion of the times, and faid many things, which we have forgot, on the occafion; but we remember they all tended to the praise of Fireblood, whose modesty, at length, put a stop to the torrent of compliments, by afferting that he had done no more than his duty, and that he should have deteited himself, could he have forsaken his friend in his adversity: and after many protestations, that he came the moment he heard of his misfortune, he asked him if he could be of any service. Wild answered, fince he had so kindly proposed that question, he must fay he should be obliged to him, if he could lend him a few guineas; for that he was very feedy. Fireblood replied, that he was greatly unhappy in not having it then in his power, adding many hearty oaths, that he had not a farthing of money in his pocket, which was, indeed, strictly true; for he had only a banknote, which he had that evening purloined from a gentleman in the play-house passage. He then asked for his wife, to whom, to speak truly, the visit was intended, her confinement being the misfortune of which he had just heard; for, as for that of Mr Wild himself, he had known it from the first minute, without ever intending to trouble him with his company. Being informed therefore of the visit which had lately happened, he reproved Wild for his cruel treatment of that good creature; then taking as sudden a leave as he civilly could of the gentleman, he hastened to comfort his lady, who received him with great kindness.

Curious anecdotes relating to the history of Newgate.

HERE resided in the castle at the same time with Mr Wild, one Roger Johnson, a very GREAT MAN, who had long been at the head of all the Prigs in Newgate, and had raised contributions on He examined into the nature of their defence, procured and instructed their evidence, and made himfelf, at least in their opinion, so necessary to them, that the whole fate of Newgate feemed entirely to depend upon him.

Wild had not been long in confinement before he

began to oppose this man. He represented him to the Prigs as a fellow, who, under the plaulible pre· th

· to

a no

· H

al

· file

· to

gle

lo

pli it

the

the the

fel

tha

to

go

the

wh

litt

wh

bre

wa

bo

dif

ed ed

· hit

· bu

dill

agai

cure

can

tion,

put t

of h

long

choic

io Ne

the F

Man

New

lage.

tence of affilting their causes, was in reality undermining THE LIBERTIES OF NEWGATE. He at first threw out certain fly hints and infinuations; but having, by degrees, formed a party against Roger, he one

day affembled them together, and spoke to them in the

following florid manner.

Friends and Fellow-citizens,

The cause which I am to mention to you this day, is of such mighty importance, that when I confider my own finall abilities, I tremble with an apprehension, lest your fafety may be rendered precarious by the weakness of him who hath undertaken to represent to you your danger. Gentlemen, the liberty of Newgate is at stake: your privileges have been long undermined, and are now openly violated by one man; by one who hath engroffed to himself the whole conduct of your trials, under colour of which he exacts what contributions on you he pleases; but are those sums appropriated to the uses for which they are raised? Your frequent convictions at the Old Bailey, those depredations

of justice, must too sensibly and forely demonstrate · the 11

D

11-

n,

e-

he

to

·e-

1

rft

V-

ne

be

his

1

ah

re-

er-

en,

ges

nly

ffed

der

on

ited

ient

ons

rate

the

the contrary. What evidence doth he ever produce for the prisoner, which the prisoner himself could not have provided, and often better inflruded? How many noble youths have there been loft, when a fingle Alibi would have Taved them! Should I be filent, nay, could your own injuries want a tongue to remonstrate, the very breath, which by this negleet hath been stopped at the Cheat, would cry our loudly against him. Nor is the exorbitancy of his plunders visible only in the dreadful consequences it hath produced to the Prigs, nor glares it only in the mileries brought on them: it blazes forth in the more defirable effects it hath wrought for himself, in the rich perquifites acquired by it : witness that filk night-gown, that robe of shame, which, to his eternal dithonour, he publicly wears; that gown, which I will not scruple to call the windingtheet of the liberties of Newgate. Is there a Prig who hath the interest and honour of Newgate to little at heart, that he can refrain from bluthing when he beholds that trophy, purchased with the breath of io many Prigs! Nor is that all. His wailtcoat embroidered with filk, and his velvet cap, bought with the same price, are enlighs of the same difgrace. Some would think the rags which covered his nakedness, when first he was committed hither, well exchanged for that gaudy trapping; but in my eye, no exchange can be profitable when dithonour is the condition. If therefore, Newgate-'d Here the only copy which we could procure of this speech breaks off abruptly; however, we can affure the reader, from very authentic information, that he concluded with adviting the Prigs to put their affairs into other hands. After which, one of his party, as had been before concerted, in a very long speech, recommended him (Wild himself) to their choice. " for himliffe the whole couldnot of

Newgate was divided into parties on this occasion; the Prigo on each side representing their chief or Great Man to be the only person by whom the affairs of Newgate could be managed with safety and advantage. The Prigo had indeed very incompatible in-

0 2

tereits :

terests; for whereas the supporters of Johnson, who was in podelion of the plunder of Newgate, were admitted to some share under their leader; so the abetters of Wild, had, on his promotion, the same views of dividing some part of the spoil among themselves. It is no wonder, therefore, they were both fo warm on each fide. What may feem more remarkable, was, that the debtors, who were entirely unconcerned in the dispute, and who were the destined plunder of both parties, should interest themselves with the utmost violence, some on behalf of Wild, and others in sayour of Johnson. So that all Newgate resounded with WILD for ever! JOHNSON for ever! And the poor debtors re echoed the liberties of Newgate! which, in the cant language, fignifies Plunder, as loudly as the thieves themselves. In short, such quarrels and animolities happened between them, that they feemed rather the people of two countries long at war with each other, than the inhabitants of the lame castle.

Wild's party at length prevailed, and he succeeded to the place and power of Johnson, whom he presently stript of all his finery; but when it was proposed, that he should sell it and divide the money for the good of the whole; he waved that motion, saying, it was not yet time, that he should find a better opportunity, that the cloaths wanted cleaning, with many other pretences, and, within two days, to the surprise of many, he appeared in them himself; for which he youchsafed no other apology than that they fitted him much better than they did Johnson, and that they be-

n

· t

· fi

· ti

· h

. ac

Lra

a

" al

· ne

· lit

· fe

' ne

th

· fho

· fec

· fu

came him in a much more elegant manner.

This behaviour in Wild greatly incensed the debtors, particularly those by whose means he had been promoted. They grumbled extremely, and vented great indignation against Wild; when one day a very grave man, and one of much authority among them, bespake them as follows:

Nothing fure can be more justly ridiculous than the conduct of those, who should lay the lamb in the wolf's way, and then should lament his being devoured. What a wolf is in a sheep-fold,

fold, a great man is in fociety. Now, when one wolf is in possession of a sheepfold, how little would it avail the simple flock to expel him, and place another in his stead? Of the same benefit to us is the overthrowing one Prig in favour of another. And for what other advantage was your ftruggle? · Did you not all know that Wild and his followers. were Prigs, as well as Johnson and his? What then could the contention be among such, but that which you have now discovered it to have been? · Perhaps some would say, Is it then our duty tamely to submit to the rapine of the Prig who now plunders us, for fear of an exchange? Surely no: but I answer, It is better to shake the plunder off thanto exchange the plunderer. And by what means can we effect this, but by a total change in our manners? Every Prig is a flave. His own Priggish desires which enslave him, themselves betray him to the tyranny of others. To preserve, therefore, the liberty of Newgate, is to change the manners of Newgate. Let us therefore who are confined here for debt only, separate ourselves entirely from the Prigs; neither drink with them, nor converse with them. Let us, at the tame time, separate ourselves farther from Priggism itfelf: instead of being ready, on every opportunity, to pillage each other, let us be content with our honest share of the common bounty, and with the acquisition of our own industry. When we separate from the Prigs, let us enter into a closer alliance with one another. Let us consider ourselvess all as members of one community, to the public good of which we are to facrifice our private views; not to give up the interest of the whole for every, little pleasure or profit which shall accrue to ourfelves. Liberty is confistent with no degree of honefty inferior to this, and the community where this abounds, no Prig will have the impudence or audaciousness to endeavour to enslave; or if he hould, his own destruction would be the only confequence of his attempt. But while one man purfues his ambition, another his interest, another his e fafety ;

10

m

ot-

ry

n,

us

he

nt

p-d.

fafety; while one hath a roguery (a Priggism they here call it) to commit, and another a roguery to defend, they must naturally sly to the favour and protection of those, who have power to give them what they desire, and to defend them from what they sear; nay, in this view it becomes their interest to promote this power in their patrons. Now, gentlemen, when we are no longer Prigs, we shall no longer have these sears or these desires. What remains, therefore, for us, but to resolve bravely to lay aside our Priggism, our roguery, in plainer words, and preserve our liberty, or to give up the latter in the preservation and preference of the former.

This speech was received with much applause; however, Wild continued as before to levy contributions among the prisoners, to apply the garnish to his own use, and to strut openly in the ornaments which he had stript from Johnson. To speak sincerely, there was more bravado than real use or advantage in these trappings. As for the night-gown, its outfide indeed made a glittering tintel appearance, but it kept him not warm; nor could the finery of it do him much honour, fince every one knew it did not properly belong to him; as to the waillcoat, it fitted him very ill, being infinitely too big for him; and the cap was fo heavy, that it made his head ach. I hus these cloaths, which perhaps, (as they presented the ideas of their misery more sensibly to the people's eyes) brought him more envy, hatred, and detraction, than all his deeper impositions and more real advantages; afforded very little use or honour to the wearer; may, could scarce serve to amuse his own vanity, when this was cool enough to reflect with the least seriousness. And should I speak in the language of a man who estimated human happiness without regard to that greatness, which we have to laboriously endeavoured to paint in this history, it is probable he never took (i. e. robbed the priloners of) a shilling, which he himself did not pay too dear for. homed sudquit outly incomplet proper than the

7%

free

rea

not

ftor

rela

ath

ceal

that

we

man

did

deat

had

awa

muc.

keep

ed t

who

fook

mov'

his b

mind

room

Dies,

prene

avenu

TO W

Worn

of the

he ha

Acep 1

fafety while while A. P. VI. in they have call it; it is a suggest of the control of the control

The dead warrant arrives for Heartfree; on which ve-

HE dead warrant, as it is called now came down to Newgate for the execution of Heartfree among the rest of the prisoners. And here the reader muit excuse us, who profess to draw naturals not perfect characters, and to record the truths of his flory, not the extravagancies of remance, while we relate a weakness in Wild, of which we are ourselves ashamed, and which we would willingly have concealed, could we have preserved, at the same time, that strict attachment to truth and impartiality, which we have professed in recording the annals of this great man. Know then, reader, that this dead-warrant did not affect Heartfree, who was to fuffer a shameful death by it, with half the concern it gave Wild, who had been the occasion of it. He had been a little struck the day before, on feeing the children carried away in tears from their father. This fight brought the remembrance of some slight injuries he had done the father, to his mind, which he endeavoured, as much as possible, to obliterate; but when one of the keepers (I should say lieutenants of the castle) repeated Heartfree's name among those of the malefactors who were to fuffer within a few days, the blood forfook his countenance, and, in a cold still stream, mov'd heavily to his heart, which had scarce strength enough left to return it through his veins. In thort, his body so visibly demonstrated the pangs of his mind, that, to escape observation, he retired to his room, where he fullenly gave vent to such bitter agonies, that even the injured Heartfree, had not the apprehension of what his wife had suffered thut every evenue of compassion, would have pitied him.

When his mind was thoroughly fatigued, and worn out with the horrors which the approaching fate of the poor wretch, who lay under a fentence which he had iniquitously brought upon him, had suggested, sleep promised him relief; but this promise, was, alas!

n

10.

M

to

r.

er

ch

10

JE.

1

P.

delu-

delusive. This certain friend to the tired body is often the severest enemy to the oppressed mind. So at least it proved to Wild, adding visionary to real horrors, and tormenting his imagination with phantoms too dreadful to be described. At length, starting from these visions, he no sooner recovered his waking fenses, than he cry'd out: "I may yet prevent this catastrophe. It is not too late to dicover the whole.' He then paused a moment : but greatness instantly returning to his assistance, checked the base thought as it first offered itself to his mind. He then reasoned thus cooly with himself: 'Shalt I, like a child, or a woman, or one of those mean wretches, whom I have always despised, be frightened by dreams and visionary phantoms, to fully that honour which I have so difficultly acquired, and so gloriously maintained! Shall I, to redeem the worthless life of this fully fellow, suffer my reputation to · contract a stain, which the blood of millions cannot wipe away! Was it only that the few, the simple * part of mankind, should call me a Rogue, perhaps I could submit; but to be for ever contemptible to " the Price, as a wretch who wanted spirit to execute my undertaking, can never be digested What is the life of a fingle man? Have not whole e armies and nations been facrificed to the honour of ONE GREAT MAN? Nay, to omit that first class of greatness, the conquerors of mankind, how often have numbers fallen by a fictitious plot, only to fatisfy the spleen, or perhaps exercise the ingenuity of a member of that second order of greatness, the Minesterial! What have I done then! Why, I have ruined a family, and brought an in nocent man to the gallows. I ought rather to weep with Alexander, that I have ruined no more, than to regret the little I have done? He at length, therefore, bravely resolved to confign over Heartfree to his fate, though it cost him more struggling than may eafily be believed, utterly to conquer his reluctance, and to banish away every degree of humanity from his mind, thele little sparks of which composed

to wr

en

feld ple glin vol to

of a

ON

01

to

Thad of fit of his gave ing

plead coac read he er

with

keer

and I defir at la was

his d arrive tende

friend herse one of those weaknesses, which we lamented in the

But, in vindication of our hero, we must beg leave to observe, that nature is seldom so kind as those writers who draw characters absolutely perfect. She seldom creates any man so completely great, or completely low, but that some sparks of humanity will glimmer in the former, and some sparks of what the volgar call evil, will dart forth in the latter; nuterly to extinguish which will give some pain and uneafiness to both; for, I apprehend, no mind was ever yet some ed entirely free from blemish, unless, peradventure, that of a sanctified hypocrite, whose praises some well-sed statterer hath gratefully thought proper to sing forth.

of bus being C Horab P. ov V. I don't when

of sure with the amount of water convenience of the

deson one morbor of 11 hate I hope server this see he

to

ot

le

ps.

to.

·92

edi

ole

100

irst

WO

nly

ge

eate

en!

in

eep

han

th,

free

han

ucs

nity

sed

one.

rosinio sinuitanto hontolego dendino estrolores sobretantes HE day was now come when poor Heartfree was to suffer an ignominious death. Friendly had, in the strongest manner, confirmed his assurance of fulfilling his promife, of becoming a father to one of his children, and a husband to the other. This gave him inexpressible comfort, and he had, the evening before, taken his last leave of the little wretches, with a tenderness which drew a tear from one of the keepers, joined to a magnanimity which would have pleased a stoic. When he was informed that the coach, which Friendly had provided for him, was ready, and that the rest of the prisoners were gone; he embraced that faithful friend with great pattion; and begged that he would leave him here; but the other defired leave to accompany him to his end; which at last he was forced to comply with. And now he was proceeding towards the coach, when he found his difficulties were not yet over; for now a friend arrived, of whom he was to take a harder and more tender leave than he had yet gone through. This friend, reader, was no other than Mrs Heartfree berfelf, who ran to him with a look all wild, staring and frantic, and, having reached his arms, fainted away.

away in them without uttering a fingle fyllable. Heartfree was, with great difficulty, able to preferve his own fenfes in fuch a furprise at such a season. And indeed our good-natured reader will be rather inclined to wish this miserable couple had, by dying in each other's arms, put a final period to their woes than have furvived to take those bitter moments which were to be their portion, and which the unhappy wife, foon recovering from the thort intermifsion of being, now began to suffer. When she became first mistress of her voice, the burst forth into the following accents: 'O my husband !-- Is this the condition in which I find you after our cruel feparation! Who hath done this? Cruel Heaven! What is the occasion? I know thou canst deserve no ill. Tell me, somebody who can speak, while I have my senses left to understand, -what is the matter!' At which words feveral laughed, and one answered: 'The matter! why no great matter. -The gentleman is not the first, nor won't be the · last: the worst of the matter is, that if we are to tay all the morning here, I shall lose my dinner.' Heartfree, pauling a moment, and recollecting himfelf, cry'd out: 'I will bear all with patience.' And then, addressing himself to the commanding officer, begged he might only have a few minutes by himself with his wife, whom he had not feen before, fince his misfortunes. The great man answered: He had compassion on him, and would do more than he could answer; but he supposed he was too much a gentleman not to know that fomething was due for such civility.' On this hint, Friendly, who was himself half dead, pulled five guineas out of his pocket; which the great man took, and faid, he would be fo generous to give him ten minutes; on which one observed, that many a gentleman had bought ten minutes with a woman dearer, and many other facetious remarks were made, unnecessary to be here related. Heartfree was now suffered to retire into a room with his wife, the commander informing him at his entrance, that he must be expeditious, for that therest of the good company would be at the

of to

was foul port comf

free away

Hear ruthe many had

partin looks drops The t

now l newal pily e

portu ajham his p

longe my most vency

of hi bleft to

breaki turnin

and v

haps,

nee before him, and he supposed he was a gontleman

of too much breeding to make them wait.

d

3

d

T,

1

115

ad

he

ue

ho

bis

he

on

ad

ny

to

ice

ng

be

297

This tender wretched couple were now retired for thele few minutes, which the commander without carefully measured with his watch; and Heartfree was mullering all his resolution to part with what his foul fo ardently doated on, and to conjure her to support his loss for the fake of her poor infants, and to comfort her with the promise of Friendly on their account; but all his defign was frustrated. Mrs Heartfree could not support the shock, but again fainted away, and so entirely lost every symptom of life, that Heartfree called vehemently for affiltance. Friendly ruthed first into the room, and was soon followed by many others, and, what was remarkable, one who had unmoved beheld the tender scene between these parting lovers, was touched to the quick by the pale looks of the woman, and ran up and down for water, drops, &c. with the utmost hurry and confusion. The ten minutes were expired, which the commander now hinted; and feeing nothing offered for the renewal of the term (for indeed Friendly had unhappily emptied his pockets) he began to grow very importunate, and at last told Heartfree, He should be ashamed not to act more like a man. Heartfree begged his pardon, and faid, he would make him wait no longer. Then, with the deepest sigh, cry'd: 'O my angel!' and embracing his wife with the utmost eagerness, kissed her pale lips with more ferveney than ever bridegroom did the blushing cheeks of his bride; he then cry'd: The Almigh y bleis thee, and, if it be his pleasure, restore the to life; if not, I befeech him we may presently meet again in a better world than this." He was breaking from her, when, perceiving her fenses returning, he could not forbear renewing his embrace, and again pressing her lips, which now recovered life and warmth fo fall, that he begged one ten minutes more to tell her what her fwooning had prevented her hearing. The worthy commander, being perhaps, a little touched at this tender scene, took friendly aside, and asked him what he would give,

if he would suffer his friend to remain half an hour? Friendly answered, any thing; that he had no more money in his pocket. but he would certainly pay him that afternoon. 'Well then, I'll be moderate,' said he,- Twenty guineas.'- Friendly answered, It is a bargain.' The commander, having exacted a firm promise, cry'd, -- 'Then I don't care if they stay a whole hour together; for what signifies hiding good news? The gentleman is reprieved ----;' of which he had just before received notice in a whisper, It would be very impertinent to offer at a description of the joy this occasioned to the two friends, or to Mrs Heartfree, who was now again recovered. A furgeon, who was happily present, was employed to bleed them all. After which the commander, who had his promise of the money again confirmed to him, wished Heartfree joy, and, shaking him very friendly by the hands, cleared the room of all the company, and left the three friends together.

C H A P. VI.

In which the foregoing happy incident is accounted for.

But There, though I am convinced my good natured reader may almost want the surgeon's assistance also, and that there is no passage in this whole story, which can afford him equal delight; yet, lest our reprieve should seem to resemble that in the Beggar's Opera, I shall endeavour to shew him, that this incident, which is undoubtedly true, is at least as natural as delightful; for, we assure him, we would rather have suffered half mankind to be hanged, than have saved one contrary to the strictest rules of writing and probability.

Be it known then (a circumstance which I think highly credible) that the great Fireblood had been a few days before, taken in the fact of a robbery, and carried before the same justice of peace, who had on his evidence, committed Heartfree to prion. This magistrate, who did indeed no small honour to the commission he bore, duly considered the weighty charge committed to him, by which he was entrusted

with

C

t

t

F

0

t

b

a

W

h

0

de

h

fc

th

be

to

gi

de

m

tir

m

lea

ha

to

bu

he

the

du

ver

mo

of

wh

31 4

1

d

of

nc

to

to

ho

m,

ay,

for.

od.

on's

this

tht;

it in

him,

s at

ged,

es of

hink

been,

hery,

had,

1.00.

ur to

ighty

uffed

with

with decisions affecting the lives, liberties, and properties of his countrymen; he therefore examined always with the utmost diligence and caution into every minute circumstance. And, as he had a good deal balanced, even when he committed Heartfree, on the excellent character given him by Friendly and the maid; and, as he was much staggered on finding that of the two persons, on whose evidence alone Heartfree had been committed, and had been fince convicted, one was in Newgate for a felony, and the other was now brought before him for a robbery, he thought proper to put the matter very home to Fireblood at this time. The young Achates was taken, as we have said, in the fact; so that denial, he saw, was in vain. He, therefore honeftly confessed what he knew must be proved; and defired, on the merit of the discoveries he made, to be admitted as an evidence against his accomplices. This afforded the happiest opportunity to the justice, to satisfy his conscience in relation to Heartfree. He told Fireblood, that if he expected the favour he folicited, it must be on condition, that he revealed the whole truth to him concerning the evidence which he had lately given against a bankrupt, and which some circumstances had induced a suspicion of; that he might depend on it, the truth would be discovered by other means, and gave some oblique hints (a deceit entirely justifiable) that Wild himself had offered such a discovery. The very mention of Wild's name immediately alarmed Fireblood, who did not in the least doubt the readiness of that GREAT MAN to hang any of the gang, when his own interest seemed to require it. He therefore hesitated not a moment : but, having obtained a promise from the justice, that he should be accepted as an evidence, he discovered the whole falshood, and declared that he had been feduced by Wild to depose as he had done.

The justice having thus luckily and timely discovered this scene of villainy, alias greatness, lost not a moment in using his utmost endeavours to get the case of that unhappy convict represented to the sovereign who immediately granted him that gracious reprieve?

P

which

which caused such happiness to the persons concerned; and which, we hope, we have now accounted for to the satisfaction of the reader.

The good magistrate having obtained this reprieve for Heartfree, thought it incumbent on him to visit him in the prison, and to sound, if possible, the depth of this affair, that if he should appear as innocent, as he now began to conceive him, he might use all imaginable methods to obtain his pardon and enlarge-

ment.

The next day therefore, after that when the miferable scene above described had passed, he went to Newgate, where he sound those three persons, namely Heartfree, his wife, and Friendly, sitting together. The justice informed the prisoner of the confession of Fireblood, with the steps which he had taken upon it. The reader will easily conceive the many outward thanks as well as inward gratitude which he received from all three; but those were of very little consequence to him, compared with the secret satisfaction he selt in his mind, from reslecting on the preservation of innocence, as he soon after very clearly perceived was the case.

When he entered the room, Mrs Heartfree was speaking with some earnestness: as he perceived, therefore, he had interrupted her, he begged she would continue her discourse, which, if he prevented by his presence, he desired to depart; but Heartfree would not suffer it. He said, she had been relating some adventures, which, perhaps, might entertain him to hear, and which she the rather desired he would hear, as they might serve to illustrate the soundation on which this falshood had been built, which had brought on her husband all his missortunes.

The justice very gladly consented, and Mrs Heartfree, at her husband's desire, began the relation from the first renewal of Wild's acquaintance with him; but, though this recapitulation was necessary for the information of our good magistrate, as it would be useless, and perhaps, tedious to the reader, we shall only repeat that part of her story to which he is only a stranger, beginning with what happened to her after

Wild

. 0

6 h

· 0

a

· fe

· di

W

· fo

th.

in

by

th.

ru

' vi

fu:

m:

Vic

159

Wild had been turned adrift in the boat, by the captain of the French privateer.

C H A P. VII.

Mrs Heartfree relates ber adventures.

RS Heartfree proceeded thus: 'The vengeance ' which the French captain exacted on that villain (our hero) persuaded me, that I was fallen into the hands of a man of honour and justice; nor, indeed, was it possible for any person to be treated with more respect and civility than I now was: but if this could not mitigate my forrows, when I reflected on the condition in which I had been betrayed to leave all that was dear to me, much less could it produce such an effect, when I discovered, as I foon did, that I owed it chiefly to a passion which threatened me with great uneafiness, ' as it quickly appeared to be very violent, and as I was absolutely in the power of the person who poss sessed it, or was rather possessed by it. I must, however, do him the justice to fay, my fears carried my suspicions farther than I asterwards found I had 'any reason to carry them: he did, indeed, very ' foon acquaint me with his passion, and used all those gentle methods, which frequently fucceed with our ' fex, to prevail with me to gratify it; but never once threatened, nor had the least recourse to force. He did not even once infinuate to me, that I was totally 'in his power, which I myfelf fufficiently faw, and whence I drew the most dreadful apprehensions, well knowing, that as there are some dispositions fo brutal, that cruelty adds a zest and savour to their pleasures; so there are others whose gentler 'inclinations are better gratified, when they win us by fofter methods to comply with their defires; yet ' that even the'e may be often compelled by an un-' ruly passion to have recourse at last to the means of 'violence, when they despair of success from per-' suasion; but I was happily the captive of a better 'man. My conqueror was one of those over whom ' vice hath a limited jurisdiction, and tho' he was too eafily.

d

e

in

n

d

t.

n

;

e

e

11

y

r

d

easily prevailed on to sin, he was proof against any

fi

. 1

. 1

. 1

· b

· I

. 1

6 b

· ti

· fi

n

F

" CC

· to

f th

f to

ri

w.

· he

m

(w

' de

· temptation to villainy.

· We had been two days almost totally becalmed, when a brisk gale rising, as we were in sight of · Dunkirk, we faw a veffel making full fail towards " us. The captain of the privateer was fo strong, that he apprehended no danger but from a man of war, which the failors discerned this not to be. · He therefore aruck his colours, and furled his fails ' as much as possible, in order to lie by and expect her, hoping she might be a prize.' (Here Heartfree smiling, his wife stopped and enquired the cause. He told her, it was from her using the sea terms so aptly: she laughed, and answered, he would wonder less at this, when he heard the long time the had been on board: and then proceeded.) 'This vessel now came along-fide of us, and hailed us, having perceived that, on which we were aboard, to be of her own country: they begged us not to put into Dunkirk, but to accompany them in their pursuit of a large English merchant-man, whom we should eafily overtake, and both together as eafily con-· quer. Our captain immediately consented to this proposition, and ordered all his fail to be crowded. This was most unwelcome news to me; however, he comforted me all he could, by affuring me, I had nothing to fear, that he would be fo far from offer. ring the least rudeness to me himself, that he would at the hazard of his life protect me from it. This affurance gave me all the confolation, which my present circumstances, and the dreadful apprehen-· fions I had on your dear account, would admit.' (At which words the tenderest glances passed on both fides between the husband and wife.)

. We failed near twelve hours, when we came in fight of the ship we were in pursuit of, and which we should probably have soon come up with had

not a very thick mist ravished her from our eyes. This mist continued several hours, and when it

e cleared up we discovered our companion at a great

distance from us; but what gave us (I mean the

captain and his crew) the greatest uneafiness, was

the fight of a very large ship within a mile of us, which presently saluted us with a gun, and now appeared to be a third rate English man of war. Our captain declared the impossibility of either sighting or escaping, and accordingly struck, without waiting for the broadside which was preparing for us, and which perhaps would have prevented me from the happiness I now enjoy. This occasioned Heartfree to change colour; his wife therefore passed hastily to circumstances of a more smiling complexion.

et

t.

fo

er

en

WC

er.

0

nto

uit

uld

on.

this

led.

ver,

had

fer-

bluc

This

my.

hen-

mit.'

both

ne in

hich

had

eyes.

en it

great

n the

, was

e the

'I greatly rejoiced at this event, as I thought it would not only reftore me to the safe possession of my jewels, but to what I valued beyond all the treasure in the universe. My expectation, however, of both these was somewhat crossed for the present: As to the former, I was told, they should be carefully preserved; but that I must prove my right to them before I could expect their restoration; which, if I mistake not, the captain did not very eagerly defire I should be able to accomplish: And as to the latter, I was acquainted, that I should be put on board the first ship, which they met on her way to England; but that they were proceeding to the West-Indies.

'I had not been long on board the man of war, before I discovered just reason rather to lament than rejoice at the exchange of my captivity (for fuch I concluded my present situation to be.) I had ' now another lover in the captain of this Englishman, and much rougher and less gallant than the Frenchman had been. He used me with scarce common civility, as indeed he shewed very little to any other person, treating his officers little better than a man of no great good-breeding would exert to his meanest fervant, and that too on some very irritating provocation. As for me, he addressed me with the insolence of a Basha to a Circassian slave; he talked to me with the loofe licence in which the most profligate libertines converse with harlots, and which women abandoned only in a moderate degree detest and abhor. He often kissed me with very

rude familiarity, and one day attempted further brutality, when a gentleman on board, and who was in my fituation, that is, had been taken by a ' privateer and was retaken, rescued me from his hands; for which the captain confined him, though 'he was not under his command, two days in irons; when he was released (for I was not suffered to visit him in his confinement) I went to him and thanked him with the utmost acknowledgment, for what he · had done and suffered on my account. The gentle. man behaved to me in the handsomest manner on this occasion; told me, he was ashamed of the high · sense I seemed to entertain of so small an obligation, of an action to which his duty as a Christian, and bis honour as a man, obliged him. From this time I lived with great familiarity with this man, whom I regarded as my protector, which he professed himself ready to be on all occasions, expresfing the utmost abhorrence of the captain's brutality; especially that shewn towards me, and the tenderness of a parent for the preservation of my virtue, for which I was not myself more sollicitous than he appeared. He was, indeed, the only man I had, hitherto met, fince my unhappy departure, who did not endeavour by all his looks, words, and actions, to affure me, he had a liking to my unfortunate person. The rest seeming desirous of sacrificing the little beauty they complimented, to their defires, without the least confideration of the ruin, which I earnestly represented to them, they were attempting to bring on me and on my future repose.

I now passed several days pretty free from the captain's molestation, till one satal night.' Here perceiving Heartsree grew pale, she comforted him by an assurance, that Heaven had preserved her chastity, and again had restored her unfullied to his arms. She continued thus: 'Perhaps I gave it a wrong epithet in the word satal; but a wretched night, I am sure I may call it, for no woman, who came off victorious, was, I believe, ever in greater danger. One night, I say, having drank his spirits high

·t

. 1

· i

·k

¢ 6

high with punch, in company with the purser, who was the only man in the ship he admitted to his table, the captain fent for me into his cabin; whither, tho' unwilling, I was obliged to go. We were no fooner alone together, than he feized me by the hand, and after affronting my ears with discourse which I am unable to repeat, he swore a great oath, that his passion was to be dallied with no longer, that I must not expect to treat him in the manner, to which a fet of blockhead land-men ' submitted. None of your coquet airs, therefore; with me, madam, faid he, for I am resolved to have you this night. No struggling nor squawling, for both will be impertinent. The first man who offers to come in here, I will have his skin · flea'd off at the gangway. He then attempted to pull me violently towards his bed. I threw myfelf on my knees, and with tears and intreaties befought his compassion; but this was, I found, to no purpose: I then had recourse to threats, and endeavoured to frighten him with the consequence; but neither had this, tho' it seemed to stagger him more than the other method, sufficient force to deliver me. At last, a stratagem came into my head, of which my perceiving him reel, gave me the first hint. I intreated a moment's reprieve only, when, collecting all the spirits I could muster, I ' put on a constrained air of gaiety, and told him with an affected laugh, he was the roughest lover I had ever met with, and that I believed I was the first woman he had ever paid his addresses to. Addresses, said be, d-n your addresses, I want to undress you. I then begged him to let us drink some, punch together; for that I loved a cann as well as himself, and never would grant the favour to any man till I had drank a hearty glass with him. O, faid he, if that be all, you shall have punch enough to drown yourself in. At which words he rung the bell, and ordered in a gallen of that liquor. I was in the mean time obliged to suffer his nauseous. kisses, and some rudenesses which I had great difficulty to restrain within moderate bounds. When the

15

n,

0-

у,

-7:

1e,

he

ad ,

ho

ind

un-

fa-

to

the

hey

ure

the

lere

him

afti-

ms.

ong

ght,

me

an-

rits

igh

the punch came in, he took up the bowl and drank my health oftentatiously, in such a quantity, that it confiderably advanced my scheme. I followed him with bumpers, as fast as possible, and was my felf obliged to drink so much, that at another time it would have staggered my own reason, but at prefent it did not affect me. At length, perceiving him very far gone, I watched an opportunity; and ran out of the cabin, resolving to seek protection of the sea, if I could find no other: but Heaven was now graciously pleased to relieve me; for in his attempt to pursue me, he reeled backwards; and falling down the cabbin stairs, he dislocated his shoulder, and so bruised himself that I was not only preserved that night from any danger of my intended ravilher; but the accident threw him into a fever which endangered his life, and whether he ever recovered or no, I am not certain; for, during his delirious fits, the eldest lieutenant commanded the ship. This was a virtuous and a brave fellow, who had been twenty-five years in that post without being able to obtain a ship, and had feen feveral boys, the bastards of noblemen, put over his head. One day, while the ship remained under his command, an English vessel bound to Corke, passed by; myself and my friend, who had formerly lain two days in irons on my account, went on board this ship, with the leave of the good lieutenant, who made us fuch prefents s as he was able of provisions, and congratulating me on my delivery from a danger to which none of the ship's crew had been strangers, he kindly wished us both a safe voyage.'

C H A P. VIII.

In which Mrs Heartfree coutinues the relation of her adventures.

HE first evening after we were aboard this vessel, which was a brigantine, we being then at no very great distance from the Madeiras, the most violent storm arose from the north west, in which

6 1

11

· t

which we presently lost both our masts; and indeed death now presented itself as inevitable to us ____I need not tell my Tommy what were then my thoughts. Our danger was fo great, that the captain of the ship, a professed atheist, betook himfelf to prayers, and the whole crew, abandoning themselves for lost, sell with the utmost eagerness to the emptying a cask of brandy, not one drop of which, they twore, should be polluted with falt · water. I observed here my old friend displayed · less courage than I expected from him. He seemed entirely swallowed up in despair. But, Heaven be praised! we were all at last preserved. · storm, after above eleven hours continuance, began to abate, and by Ligites entirely ceased; but · left us fill rolling at the mercy of the waves, which carried us at their own pleature to the fouth east, a vait number of leagues. Our crew were all dead drunk with the brandy which they had taken fuch care to preserve from the sea; but, indeed, had they been awake, their labour would have been of very little fervice, as we had loft all our rigging; our brigantine being reduced to a naked hulk only. In this condition we floated above thirty hours, till in the midlt of a very dark night we spied a light which feeming to approach us, grew fo large, that our failors concluded it to be the lanthorn of a man of war; but when we were cheering ourselves. with the hopes of our deliverance from this wretched fituation, on a fudden, to our great concern,t he ! light entirely disappeared, and left us in a despair, encreased by the remembrance of those pleasing imaginations with which we had entertained our minds during its appearance. The rest of the night we passed in melancholy conjectures on the light which had deserted us, which the major part of the failors concluded to be a meteor. In this distress we had one comfort, which was a plentiful store of provision: this so supported the spirits of the failors, that they declared, had they but a fufficient quantity of brandy, they cared not whether they faw land for a month to come: but in-· deed,

my ave nts ing

dly

7

d

ot

y

to

er

۲,

n-

a

in

nd

en,

re-

Hel

nd,

her

this eing iras,

, in hich

· f

· f

· P

· a

· t

" c

. 4

V

· n

'a

F

" e

n

tl

· cl

· d

· d

· fc

it it

· le

'tl

· h

· hi

· th

th!

gi

re

' CC

' til

· le

· W

fe:

m

ca

eff

m

bu

1

ex

ig

do

deed, we were much nearer it than we imagined, as we perceived at break of day: one of the most knowing of the crew declared we were near the continent of Africa; but when we were within three leagues of it, a fecond violent storm arose from the north, fo that we again gave over all hopes of safety. This storm was not quite so outrageous as the former, but of much longer continuance, for it lasted near three days; and drove us an immense number of leagues to the south. We were within a league of the shore, expecting every moment our ship to be dashed to pieces, when the tempest ceased all of a sudden; but the waves still continued to roll like mountains, and before the · fea recovered its calm motion, our thip was thrown fo near the land, that the captain ordered out his boat, declaring he had scarce any hopes of saving her; and indeed we had not quitted her many · minutes, before we saw the justness of his apprehensions; for she struck against a rock, and immediately funk. The behaviour of the failors on this occasion very much affected me: they beheld their ship perish with the tenderness of a lover or a parent, they spoke of her as the fondest husband would of his wife; and many of them, who feemed to have no tears in their composition, shed them plentifully at her finking. The captain himself cried out, 'Go thy way, charming Molly, the fea " never devoured a lovelier morfel. If I have fifty " vessels, I shall never love another like thee. Poor " flut? I shall remember thee to my dying day !'-Well, the boat now conveyed us all fafe to shore, where we landed with very little difficulty. It was now about noon, and the rays of the fun, which defcended almost perpendicular on our heads, were extremely hot and troublesome. However, we travelled through this extreme heat about five miles over a plain. This brought us to a vast wood, which extended itself as far as we could see both to the right and left, and seemed to me to put an entire end to our progress. Here we decreed to rest, and dine on the provision which we had brought from from the ship, of which we had sufficient for very few meals; our boat being fo overloaded with people, that we had very little room for luggage of any kind. Our repast was falt pork broiled, which the keenness of hunger made so delicious to my companions, that they fed very heartily upon it. 'As for myself, the fatigue of my body, and the vexation of my mind, had fo thoroughly weakned ' me, that I was almost entirely deprived of appetite: and the utmost dexterity of the most accomplished ' French cook would have been ineffectual, had he 'endeavoured to tempt me with delicacies. I thought ' myself very little a gainer by my late escape from the tempest, by which I seemed only to have exchanged the element in which I was presently to die. When our company had sufficiently, and in deed very plentifully, feasted themselves, they re-' folved to enter the wood, and endeavour to pass it, in expectation of finding some inhabitants, at 'least some provision. We proceeded therefore in the following order; one man in the front with a hatchet to clear our way, and two others followed him with guns to protect the rest from wild beasts: then walked the rest of our company, and last of all the captain himself, being armed likewise, with a gun to defend us from any attack behind, in the rear, I think you call it. And thus our whole company, being fourteen in number, travelled on till night overtook us, without feeing any thing unless a few birds, and some very insignificant animals. We rested all night under the covert of some trees, and indeed we very little wanted shelter at that feafon, the heat in the day being the only inclemency we had to combat with in this climate. I cannot help telling you, my old friend lay still nearelt to me on the ground, and declared he would be my protector should any of the sailors offer rudeness; but I can acquit them of any such attempt; nor was I ever affronted by any one, more than with a coarle expression, proceeding rather from the roughness and ignorance of their education, than from any abandoned principle or want of humanity. · We

e

n

is

g

17

n-

on

eld

or

nd

ied

em

ielf

fea

ifty

oor

ell,

ere

WO

de-

ex-

lled

ra

ex-

the

en-

est,

ght

om

We had now proceeded very little way on our e next day's march, when one of the failurs having fkipt nimbly up a hill, with the affiltance of a speak. ing trumpet informed us, that he faw a town a very little way off. This news fo comforted me, and gave me fuch strength, as well as spirits, that, with the help of my old friend, and another, who · fuffered me to lean on them, I, with much difficulty, · attained the fummit; but was so absolutely overcome in climbing it, that I had no longer sufficient strength to support my tottering limbs, and was obliged to · lay myself again on the ground; nor could they · prevail on me to undertake descending through a very thick wood into a plain, at the end of which indeed ' appeared some houses or rather huts, but at a much greater distance than the failor had assured us; the ! little way, as he had called it, feeming to me full wenty miles, nor was it, I believe, much less.

C H A P. IX.

Containing incidents very surprising.

.

*

4.

. 1

· t

· t

· b

· d

· W

· W

. 0

· th

" je

· to

te te

ar

HE captain declared, he would, without delay, proceed to the town before him; in
which resolution he was seconded by all the crew;
but when I could not be persuaded, nor was I able
to travel any further before I had rested myself,
my old friend protested he would not leave me, but
would stay behind as my guard; and, when I had
resreshed myself with a little repose, he would attend
me to the town, which the captain promised he would
not leave, before he had seen us.
They were no sooner departed than (having sink
thanked my protector for his care of me) I resign-

They were no sooner departed than (having first thanked my protector for his care of me) I resigned thanked my protector for his care of me) I resigned thanked my protector for his care of me) I resigned to sleep, which immediately closed my eyelids, and would probably have detained me very long in his gentle dominion, had I not been awaked with a squeeze by the hand by my guard which I at first thought intended to alarm me with the danger of some wild beast; but I soon perceived the danger of some wild beast; but I soon perceived the danger of some wild beast; but I soon perceived the danger of some wild beast; but I soon perceived the danger of some wild beast; but I soon perceived the danger of some wild beast; but I soon perceived the danger of some a softer motive, and that a gentle continuous that a gent

'and

fwain was the only wild beast I had to apprehend. He began now to disclose his passion in the strongest manner imaginable, indeed with a warmth rather beyond that of both my former lovers; but as yet without any attempt of absolute force. On my fide remonstrances were made in more bitter exclamations and revilings than I had used to any, that villain Wild excepted. I told him, he was the basest and most treacherous wretch alive; that his having cloaked his iniquitous designs under the appearance of virtue and friendship, added an ineffable degree of horror to them; that I detelted ' him of all mankind the most, and, could I be brought to yield to profitution, he should be the ' last to enjoy the ruins of my honour. He suffered ' himself not to be provoked by this language, but only changed his method of solicitation from flattery to bribery. He unript the lining of his waist-'coat, and pulled forth several jewels; these, he said, he had preserved from infinite danger to the happiest purpose, if I could be won by them. I rejected them often with the utmost indignation, till at last, casting my eye, rather by accident than defign, on a diamond necklace, a thought, like lightning, ' shot through my mind, and, in an instant, I re-' membered, that this was the very necklace you had ' fold the curied Count, the cause of all our missor-'tunes. The confusion of ideas, into which this ' furprise hurried me, prevented my reflecting on ' the villain who then stood before me; but the first recollection presently told me, it could be no other than the Count himself, the wicked tool of Wild's barbarity. Good Heavens! what was then my condition! How shall I describe the tumult of passions ' which then laboured in my breast! However, as I was happily unknown to him, the least suspicion on his fide was altogether impossible. He imputed, ' therefore, the eagerness with which I gazed on the 'jewels, to a very wrong cause, and endeavoured to put as much additional foftness into his countenance as he was able. My fears were a little quieted, 'and I was resolved to be very liberal of promises,

t de-

be

at,

ho

ty,

me

gth

to

hey

ery

eed

uch

the

full

y felf, but I had

able

attend would

g first religned my me ve-

e with

gentle (wait

and hoped fo thoroughly to perfuade him of my e venality, that he might, without any doubt, be drawn in to wait the captain and crew's return, who would, I was very certain, not only preserve me from his violence, but secure the restoration of what you had been so cruelly robbed of. But, alas! I was mistaken. Mrs Heartfree again perceiving symptoms of the utmost disquietude in her husband's countenance, cry'd out; 'My dear, don't you apprehend any harm .- But, to deliver you as foon · as possible from your anxiety. — When he perceived · I declined the warmth of his addresses, he begged * me to confider; he changed at once his voice and features, and, in a very different tone from what he had hitherto affected, he swore I should not deceive him as I had the captain; that fortune * had kindly thrown an opportunity in his way, which he was resolved not foolishly to lose; and concluded with a violent oath, that he was determined to enjoy me that moment; and, therefore, I knew the consequence of resistance. He then caught " me in his arms, and began such rude attempts, that I screamed out with all the force I could, tho' I had so little hopes of being rescued, when there " fuddenly rushed forth from a thicket, a creature, which, at his first appearance, and in the hurry of fpirits I then was, I did not take for a man; but " indeed, had he been the fiercest of wild beasts, I fhould have rejoiced at his devouring us both. s scarce perceived he had a musket in his hand, · before he struck my ravisher such a blow with it, that he felled him at my feet. He then advanced with a gentle air towards me, and told me in French, · he was extremely glad he had been luckily present to my affistance. He was naked, except his middle and his feet, if I can call a body so which was covered with hair almost equal to any beast whatever. Indeed his appearance was fo horrid in my eyes, that the friendship he had shewn me, as well as his courteous behaviour, could not entirely re-I move the dread I had conceived from his figure. I believe he saw this very visibly; for he begged me

41

1 fe

f d

. C

P

6 a

- bakedi

onot to be frightened, fince whatever accident had brought me thither, I should have reason to thank · Heaven for meeting him, at whose hands I might affure myself of the utmost civility and protection. In the midst of all this consternation, I had spirits enough to take up the casket of jewels, which the villain, in falling, had dropt out of his hands, and conveyed it into my pocket. My deliverer telling me, that I feemed extremely weak and faint, defired me to refresh myself at his little hut, which, he said, was hard by. If his demeanour had been less kind and obliging, my desperate situation must have lent ' me confidence; for fure the alternative could not be doubtful, whether I should rather trust this man, who, notwithstanding his savage outside, expressed so ' much devotion to ferve me, which at least I was not certain of the fallhood of, or should abide with one whom I so perfectly well knew to be an accomplished villain. I, therefore, committed myself to his guidance, though with tears in my eyes, and begged him to have compassion on my innocence, which was absolutely in his power. He said, the treatment he had been witness of, which, he supposed, wasifrom one who had broken his truft towards me, ' fufficiently justified my fuspicion; but begged me to dry my eyes, and he would foon convince me, that I was with a man of different fentiments. The kind accents which accompanied these words, gave me fome comfort, which was affilted by the re-possession of our jewels by an accident fo strongly favouring of the disposition of Providence in my favour.'

31

S,

03

re

e,

of

ut

I

nd,

ed

ch,

ent

dle

was

at-

my

well

re-

ure.

me

not

We left the villain weltering in his blood, though beginning to recover a little motion, and walked together to his hut, or rather cave; for it was under ground, on the fide of a hill; the fituation was very pleasant, and from its mouth we overbooked a large plain, and the town I had before feen. As foon as I entered it, he defired me to fit. down on a bench of earth, which ferved him for chairs, and then laid before me some fruits, the wild product of that country, one or two of which had

an excellent flavour. He likewise produced some

baked flesh, a little resembling that of venison. He then brought forth a bottle of brandy, which, he faid, had remained with him ever fince his fettling there, now above thirty years; during all which time he had never opened it, his only liquor being water; that he had referved this bottle as a cordial in sickness; but, he thanked Heaven, he had never yet had occasion for it. He then acquainted me, that he was a hermit, that he had been formerly cast away on that coast, with his wife, whom he "dearly loved, but could not preferve from perithing; on which account he had resolved never to return to France, which was his native country, but to devote himself to prayer, and a holy life, placing all his hopes in the bleffed expectation of meeting that dear woman again in Heaven, where he was convinced the was now a faint, and an interceder for him. He faid, he had exchanged a watch with the king of that country, whom he described to be a very just and good man, for a gun, some powder, shot, and ball; with which he sometimes provided himself food, but more generally used it in · defending himself against wild beasts; so that his diet was chiefly of the vegetable kind. He told ' me many more circumstances, which I may re-· late to you hereafter: but to be as concise as pos-· fible at prefent, he at length greatly comforted me, by promising to conduct me to a sea-port, where I might have an opportunity to meet with some · vessels trafficking for slaves; and whence I might once more commit myself to that element, which though I had already fuffered fo much on it, I must again trust to put me in possession of all I lo-· ved.

'The character he gave me of the inhabitants of the town we saw below us, and of their king, made me desirous of being conducted thither; especially as I very much wished to see the captain and sailors, who had behaved very kindly to me, and with whom, notwithstanding all the civil behaviour of the hermit, I was rather easier in my mind, than alone with this single man; but he dissuaded me greatly

Wa

w

G

im

greatly from attempting fuch a walk, till I had recruited my spirits with rest, desiring me to repose myself on his couch or bank, saying, that he himfelf would retire without the cave, where he would remain as my guard. I accepted this kind propofal; but it was long before I could procure any flumber; however, at length, weariness prevailed over my fears, and I enjoyed several hours sleep. When I awaked, I found my faithful centinel on his post, and ready at my summons. This behaviour infused some confidence into me; and I now repeated my request, that he would go with me tothe town below; but he answered, it would be better advised to take some repast before I undertook the journey, which I should find much longer than it appeared. I consented, and he set forthe a greater variety of fruits than before, of which 'I ate very plentifully: my collation being ended, I renewed the mention of my walk; but he still perfisted in dissuading me, telling me, that I was not yet strong enough; that I could repose myself no where with greater safety than in his cave; and that, for his part, he could have no greater happi-" ness than that of attending me, adding, with a sigh, it was a happiness he should envy any other, more than all the gifts of fortune. You may imagine, L' l began now to entertain suspicions; but he prefently removed all doubt, by throwing himself at ' my feet, and expressing the warmest passion for me. I should have now sunk with despair, had he not accompanied these professions with the most vehement protestations, that he would never offer me ' any other force but that of entreaty, and that he would rather die the most cruel death by my coldness, than gain the highest bliss by becoming the occasion of a tear of sorrow to these bright eyes, which, he faid, were stars, under whose benign influence ' alone he could enjoy, or indeed suffer life.' She was repeating many more compliments he made her, when a horrid uproar, which alarmed the whole Gate, put a stop to her narration at present. It is impossible for me to give the reader a better idea of the

oe.

0.

in

is

ld

6-

1

ie,

re

ne

ht

10-

of

ide

lly

ai-

ith

of

lan

me

tly

the noise which now arose, than by desiring him to imagine I had the hundred tongues the poet once wished for, and was vociferating from them all at once, by hollowing, scolding, crying, swearing, bellowing, and in short, by every different articulation which is within the scope of the human organ.

C H A P. X.

A horrible uproar in the Gate.

BUT however great an idea the reader may hence conceive of this uproar, he will think the occasion more than adequate to it, when he is informed, that our hero, (I blush to name it) had discovered an injury done to his honour, and that in the tenderest point—In a word, reader, (for thou must know it, though it give thee the greatest horror imaginable) he had caught Fireblood in the arms of his lovely Lxtitia.

As the generous bull, who having long depastured among a number of cows, and thence contracted an opinion that these cows are all his own property, if he beholds another bull bestride a cow within his walks, he roars aloud, and threatens instant vengeance with his horns, till the whole parish are alarmed with his bellowing: not with less noise, nor less dreadful menaces did the fury of Wild burst forth, and terrify the whole Gate. Long time did rage render his voice inarticulate to the hearer; as when, at a vifiting day, fifteen or fixteen, or perhaps twice as many females of delicate but shrill pipes, ejaculate all at once on different subjects, all is found only, the harmony entirely melodious indeed, but conveys no idea to our ears: but at length, when reason began to get the better of his passion, which latter being deserted by his breath, began a little to retreat, the following accents leapt over the hedge of his teeth, or rather the ditch of his gums, whence those hedgestakes had long fince by a patten been displaced in battle with an amazon of Drury. -Man

61

s t

OI

e n

· h

West-

* '-Man of honour! doth this become a friend? · Could I have expected fuch a breach of all the laws of honour from thee, whom I had taught to walk in its paths? Hadst thou chosen any other way to injure my confidence, I could have forgiven it; but this is a stab in the tenderest part, a wound never to be healed, an injury never to be repaired: for it is not only the loss of an agreeable com-' panion, of the affections of a wife, dearer to my ' foul than life itself, it is not this loss alone I lament: this loss is accompanied with disgrace, and with dishonour. The blood of the Wilds, which hath run with fuch uninterrupted purity through fo many generations, this blood is fouled, is contaminated: Hence flow my tears, hence arises my grief. This is the injury never to be redressed, nor ever to be with honour forgiven.' ' My - in a band-box, answered Fireblood, here is a noise about your honour! If the mischief done to your blood be all you complain of, I am fure you complain of nothing: for my blood is as good as yours.' You have no conception,' replied Wild, of the tenderness of ' honour; you know not how nice and delicate it is in both sexes; so delicate, that the least breath of air which rudely blows on it, destroys it.' . I will prove from your own words, fays Fireblood, 'I have not wronged your honour. Have you not often told me, that the honour of a man confifted in receiving no affront from his own fex, and that of a woman in receiving no kindness from ours? Now, Sir, if I have given you no affront, how have I in-'jured your honour?' But doth not every thing,' cried Wild, ' of the wife belong to the husband? A married man therefore hath his wife's honour as well as his own, and by injuring her's you injure his. How cruelly you have hurt me in this tender part, I need not repeat; the whole Gate knows it, and the world shall. I will apply to Doctors Commons for my redress against her, I will shake off as much of my dishonour as I can by parting with her; and as for you, expect to hear of me in * The beginning of this speech is loft.

e)

2.

ed

an

if

ks,

ith

his

ne-

ify

pice

ay,

on

en-

our

the

by

ac.

the

ong

'a-

lan

Westminster-hall; the modern method of repairing these breaches, and of resenting this affront." D-n your eyes,' cries Fireblood, 'I fear you not, onor do I believe a word you fay, 'Nay, if you affront me personally, says Wild, another fort of refentment is prescribed.' At which words, advancing to Fireblood, he presented him with a box on the ear, which the youth immediately returned, and now our hero and his friend fell to boxing, though with some difficulty, both being incumbered with the chains which they wore between their legs: A few blows passed on both sides, before the gentlemen, who stood by, stept in and parted the combatants; and now both parties having whispered each other, that, if they out-lived the ensuing sessions and escaped the tree, the one should give and the other should receive fatisfaction in fingle combat, they separated, and the Gate foon recovered its former tranquillity.

Mrs Heartfree was then desired, by the justice and her husband both, to conclude her story, which she

did in the words of the next chapter.

C H A P. XI.

The conclusion of Mrs Heartfree's adventures.

TF I mistake not, I was interrupted just as I was beginning to repeat some of the compliments made me by the hermit.'- Just as you had finished them, I believe, Madam,' faid the justice. 'Very well, ' Sir,' said she, ' I am sure I have no pleasure in the repetition. He concluded then with telling me, though I was, in his eyes, the most charming woman in the world, and might tempt a faint to abandon the ways of holiness, yet my beauty inspired him with a much tenderer affection towards me, than to · purchase any fatisfaction of his own desires with my ' misery; if therefore I could be so cruel to him, to reject his honest and sincere address, nor could fubmit to a folitary life with one, who would endeavour, by all possible means, to make me, happy, · I had no force to dread; for that I was as much at my liberty as if was in France, or England, of any

·tl

· C(

· lo

· hi

W

' m

on

me

· fw

no

any other free country. I repulsed him with the fame civility with which he advanced; and told him, that as he professed great regard to religion, I was convinced he would cease from all farther · solicitation, when I informed him, that if I had no other objection, my own innocence would not admit of my hearing him on this subject, for that I was ' married .- He started a little at that word, and was ' for some time silent; but at length recovering himfelf, he began to urge the uncertainty of my hufband's being alive, and the probability of the contrary: he then spoke of marriage as of a civil po-' licy only; on which head he urged many arguments onot worth repeating, and was growing so very eager and importanate, that I know not whither his ' passion might have hurried him, had not three of the failors well armed, appeared at that instant in ' fight of the cave. I no fooner faw them, than exolting with the utmost inward joy, I told him my companions were come for me, and that I mult ' now take my leave of him; affuring him that I would always remember, with the most grateful 'acknowledgement, the favours I had received at his hands, He fetched a very heavy figh, and squeezing me tenderly by the hand, he faluted my ' lips with a little more eagerness than the European falutations admit of; and told me, he should 'likewise remember my arrival at his cave to the last ' day of his life: adding-; O that he could there fpend the whole in the company of one, whose bright eyes had kindled; - but I know you will think, Sir, that we women love to repeat the ' compliments made us, I will therefore omit them. ' ln a word, the failors being now arrived I quitted ' him, with some compassion for the reluctance with which he parted from me, and went forward with ' my companions.

y

te.

nd

he

vas.

nts

ned

ell,

the

me,

man

don

him

n to

my

him,

ould

en-

ppy

ch at

, or

apy

We had proceeded but a very few paces before one of the failors said to his comrades; D—n me, Jack, who knows whether you fellow hath not some good slip in his cave? I innocently answered, the poor wretch had only one bottle of

brandy.

brandy.-Hath he fo? cries the feilor: 'fore George we will tafte it; -and, fo faying, they immediately returned back, and myself with them. We found the poor man prostrate on the ground, expressing all the symptems of misery and lamentation. I told him in French (for the sailors could not speak that language) what they wanted—He pointed to the place where the bottle was deposited, saying they were welcome to that, and whatever else he had; and added, he cared not if they took his life also. The failors searched the whole cave, where finding nothing more which they deemed worth their taking, they walked off with the bottle, and immediately emptying it, without offering me · a drop, they proceeded with me towards the town. . In our way I observed one whilper another, while he kept his eye stedfattly fixed on me. This gave me some uneasiness; but the other answered: No d-n me, the captain will never forgive us. Befides, we have enough of it among the black wo men, and, in my mind, one colour is as good as another. This was enough to give me violent apprehensions; but I heard no more of that kind, till we came to the town, where, in about fix hours, · I arrived in fafety.

'As foon as I came to the captain, he enquired what was become of my friend, meaning the vil-· lainous Count. When he was informed by me of · what had happened, he wished me heartily joy of my delivery, and expressing the utmost abhorrence of such baseness, swore, if ever he met him, he would cut his throat; but indeed we both concluded, that he had died of the blow which the hermit ANGERIAS VICTORIA DEL TENTA DE LE COLO

· had given him.

" I was now introduced to the chief magistrate of this country, who was defirous of feeing me. I will give you a short description of him: He was choien (as is the custom there) for his superior bravery and wisdom. His power is entirely ab-· folute during its continuance; but on the first deviation from equity and justice, he is liable to be deposed, and punished by the people, the el-

e ders

. P

· u

ne

* ec

· E

"a

· VI

' in

re

· be

W.

f fer

f ro

* de

* bu

f ar

" wl

* to

col

PI

ter

" ma

" me

" (th

· lov

fur fur

me

· I

cap

wh

gua

1 ver

ders of whom, once a year, assemble, to examine into his conduct. Befides the danger which these examinations, which are very firict, expose him to, his office is of such care and trouble, that nothing but that restless love of power, so predomiant in the mind of man, could make it the object of defire; for he is indeed the only flave of all the natives of this country. He is obliged, in time of peace, to hear the complaint of every person in his dominions, and to render him justice. For which ' purpose every one may demand an audience of him, ' unless during the hour which he is allowed for din-'ner, when he sits alone at the table, and is attended in the most public manner, with more than 'European ceremony. This is done to create an Tawe and respect towards him in the eye of the vulgar; but, lest it should elevate him too much 'in his own opinion, in order to his humiliation, he receives every evening in private, from a kind of beadle, a gentle kick on the posteriors, besides which, he wears a ring in his nose, somewhat refembling that we ring our pigs with, and a chain 'round his neck, not unlike that worn by our aldermen; both which, I suppose, to be emblematical, but heard not the reasons of either assigned. There are many more particularities among these people, which, when I have an opportunity, I may relate to you. The fecond day after my return from court, one of his officers, whom they call Schach 'PIMPACH, waited upon me, and, by a French interpreter who lives here, informed me, that the chief ' magistrate liked-my person, and offered me an immense present, if I would suffer him to enjoy it " (this is, it feems, their common form of making ' love.) I rejected the present, and never heard any further folicitation; for, as it is no shame for wo-" men here to consent at the first proposal, so they never receive a fecond.

0

p.

rs,

ed

/il-

of

of

nce

he

nd.

mit

of

was

rior

ab.

first

to

el.

ders

'I had resided in this town a week, when the captain informed me, that a number of slaves, who had been taken captive in war, were to be guarded to the sea-side, where they were to be sold

that if I would embrace this opportunity, I might affure myfelf of finding a passage to America, and thence to England; acquainting me, at the same time, that he himself intended to go with them. I readily agreed to accompany him. The chief, being advertised of our designs, sent for us both to court, and, without mentioning a word of love to me, having presented me with a very rich jewel, of less value, he said, than my chastity, took a very civil leave, recommending me to the care of Heaven,

and ordering us a large supply of provisions for our journey. We were provided with mules for ourselves, and what we carried with us, and in nine days, reached the sea-shore, where we found an English vessel ready to receive both us and the slaves. We went · aboard it, and sailed the next day with a fair wind for New-England, where I hoped to get an immediate passage to the Old; but Providence was kinder than my expectation; for the third day after we were at sea, we met an English man of war homeward bound; the captain of it was a very good-* natured man, and agreed to take me on board. I e accordingly took my leave of my old friend the master of the shipwrecked vessel, who went on to · New-England, whence he intended to pass to Jamaica, where his owners lived. I was now treated with great civility, had a little cabin assigned me, dined every day at the eaptain's table, who was indeed a very gallant man, and, at first, made me a tender of his affections; but, when he found me resolutely bent to preserve myself pure and entire for the best of husbands, he grew cooler in his addresses, and soon behaved in a manner very pleasing to me, regarding my fex only so far as to pay me a deference which is very agreeable to us all.

all

0

ad

gi

W

H

th

an

VI

je

co

fir

Wa

ture in this passage at all worth relating, 'till my landing at Gravesend, whence the captain brought

me in his own boat to the Tower. In a short hour

f after my arrival we had that meeting, which

however dreadful at first, will, I now hope, by the good offices of the best of men, whom Heaven for ever bless, end in our perfect happiness, and be a strong instance of what I am persuaded is the surest truth, that Providence will, sooner or later, procure the felicity of the virtuous and innocent.

t

d

e

ss

il

n,

ur

nd

h.

Tel

ent

nd

ne-

der

we.

ne-

od.

the

1 to

Ja-

ated

me,

in-

me

me

tire

ad.

fing

ne a

ven-

my

nght

hour

hich

rever

Mrs Heartfree thus ended her speech, having before delivered to her husband the jewels which the Count had robbed him of, and that presented her by the African chief, which last was of immense value. The good magistrate was sensibly touched at her narrative, as well on the consideration of the sufferings she had herself undergone, as for those of her husband, which he had himself been innocently the instrument of bringing upon him. That worthy man, however, much rejoiced in what he had already done for his preservation, and promised to labour with his utmost interest and industry, to procure the absolute pardon, rather of his sentence, than of his guilt, which he now plainly discovered was a barbarous and false imputation.

C H A P. XII.

The history returns to the contemplation of GREATNESS.

DUT we have already perhaps detained our reader too long in this relation, from the confideration of our hero, who daily gave the most exalted proofs of greatness, in cajoling the Prigs, and in exactions on the debtors; which latter now grew fo great, i. e. corrupted in their morals, that they spoke with the utmost contempt of what the vulgar call Honesty. The greatest character among them was that of a Pick-pocket, or in truer language, a File; and the only censure was want of dexterity. As to virtue, goodness, and such like, they were the objects of mirth and derision, and all Newgate was a complete collection of Prigs, every man being defirous to pick his neighbour's pocket, and every one was as sensible that his neighbour was as ready to pick his his; fo that (which is almost incredible) as great roguery was daily committed within the walls of New.

gate as without.

The glory resulting from these actions of Wild probably animated the envy of his enemies against him. The day of his trial now approached; for which, as Socrates did, he prepared himself; but not weakly and foolishly, like that philosopher, with patience and refignation, but with a good number of falle witnesses. However, as success is not always proportioned to the wildom of him who endeavours to attain it; fo are we more forry than ashamed to relate, that our hero was, notwithstanding his utmost caution and prudence, convicted, and lentenced to a death, which, when we confider not only the great men who have suffered it, but the much larger number of those whose highest honour it hath been to merit it, we cannot call otherwise than Honourable. Indeed those who have unluckily missed it, feem all their days to have laboured in vain to attain' an end, which fortune, for reasons only known to herself, hath thought proper to deny them. Without any farther preface then, our hero was fentenced to be hanged by the neck: But whatever was to be now his fate, he might confole himself that he had ·perpetrated what.

Nec poterit ferrum, nec edax abolere vetustas.

For my own part, I confess, I look on this death of Hanging to be as proper for a Hero as any other; and solemnly declare, that had Alexander the Great been hanged, it would not in the least have diminished my respect to his memory. Provided a hero in his life doth but execute a sufficient quantity of mischies: provided he be but well and heartily curied by the widow, the orphan, the poor, and the oppressed (the sole rewards, as many authors have bitterly lamented both in prote and verse, of greatness, i. e. Priggism) I think it avails little of what nature his death be, whether it be by the axe, the halter, or

to p glor GR

took afflid to c Othe fingl trial once him. admi frequ embe good pily confe one t fore,

A die Jon dea leas

it; n

curio

hath

ORDI

found

the fword. Such names will be always fure of living to posterity, and of enjoying that same which they so gloriously and eagerly coveted; for, according to a GREAT Dramatic poet,

--- Fame

Not more furvives from good than evil deeds.

' Th' aspiring youth that fired th' Ephesian dome,

Outlives in fame the pious fool who rais'd it.'

Our hero now suspected that the malice of his enemies would overpower him. He, therefore, betook himself to that true support of greatness in affliction, a bottle; by means of which he was enabled to curse, and swear, and bully, and brave his fate. Other comfort indeed he had not much; for not a fingle friend ever came near him. His wife, whole trial was deferred to the next fellions, vifited him but once, when she plagued, tormented, and upbraided him so cruelly, that he forbad the keeper ever to admit her again. The Ordinary of Newgate had frequent tenferences with him, and greatly would it embellith our history, could we record all which that good man delivered on these occasions; but unhappily we could procure only the substance of a fingle conference, which was taken down in short hand by one who overheard it. We shall transcribe it, therefore, exactly in the fame form' and words we received it; nor can we help regarding it as one of the most curious pieces, which either ancient or modern history hath recorded.

C H A P. XIII.

A dialogue between the Ordinary of Newgate and Mr Jonathan Wild the Great: In which the Subjects of death, immortality, and other grave matters, are very learnedly handled by the former.

ORDINARY. COOD morrow to you, Sir: I hope you rested well last night.

JONATHAN. D—n'd ill, Sir. I dreamed so confoundedly of hanging, that it disturbed my sleep.

ORDINARY.

ORDINARY. Fie upon it. You should be more refigned. I wish you would make a little better use of those instructions which I have endeavoured to incultate into you, and particularly last Sunday, and from these words; "Those who do evil shall go into ever." lasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels," I undertook to shew you, first, what is meant by EVERLASTING FIRE; and, secondly, who are THE DEVIL AND HIS ANGELS: I then proceeded to draw some inferences from the whole "; in which I am mightily deceived, if I did not convince you, that you yourself was one of those ANGELS; and, consequently, must expect EVERLASTING FIRE to be your portion in the other world.

JONATHAN. Faith, Doctor, I remember very little of your inferences; for I fell asleep soon after your naming your text; but did you preach this doctrine then, or do you repeat it now, in order to comfort

me ?

Ordinary. I do it, in order to bring you to a true sense of your manifold sins, and, by that means, to induce you to repentance. Indeed, had I the eloquence of Cicero, or of Tully, it would not be sufficient to describe the pains of hell, or the joys of heaven. The utmost that we are taught is, that "ear hath not heard, nor can heart conceive." Who then would, for the pitiful consideration of the riches and pleasures of this world, forfeit such inestimable happiness! such joys! such pleasures! such delights! Or who would run the venture of such misery, which but to think on, shocks the human understanding! Who, in his senses, then, would prefer the latter to the former?

JONATHAN. Ay, who indeed! I affure you, Doctor, I had much rather be happy than miserable.

But † * * * * *

t This part was so blotted that it was illegible.

ORDINARY.

ful

fay

you

is m

yet

exco

prie

from

if I

of m

wha

with

hero

He pronounced this word HULL, and perhaps would have spelt it so.

ORDINARY. Nothing can be plainer. St

JONATHAN.

once convinced

no man

lives of

whereas

fure the clergy * * opportunity * * *

* better informed * * * *

* all manner of vice * * * *

ORDINARY. * are * atheist * * deist * ari * cinian * hanged * burnt * oiled * oasted.

* * dev * his an * ell fire * ternal da * * tion.

JONATHAN. You * * to frighten me out of my wits: But the good * * is, I doubt not, more merciful than his wicked * * If I should believe all you fay, I am fure I shall die in inexpressible horror.

ar

ho

nes

ble

ts!

ich

to

)oc-

ible.

have

ARY

ORDINARY. Despair is sinful. You should place your hopes in repentance and grace; and though it is most true, that you are in danger of the judgment; yet there is still room for mercy, and no man, unless excommunicated, is absolutely without hopes of a reprieve.

JONATHAN: I am not without hopes of a reprieve from the cheat yet; I have pretty good interell; but if I cannot obtain it, you shall not frighten me out of my courage, I will not die like a pimp. D—n me, what is death? It is nothing but to be with Platos and with Cæsars,—as the poet says, and all the other great herces of antiquity. * * * * * * *

ORDINARY. Ay, all this is very true; but life is sweet for all that, and I had rather live to eternity, than go into the company of any such heathens, who are, I doubt not, in hell with the devil and his angels; and, as little as you seem to apprehend it, you may find yourself there before you expect it. Where then will be your tauntings and your vauntings, your boastings and your braggings? You will then be ready to give more for a drop of water than you ever gave for a bottle of wine,

Jonathan. Faith, Doctor, well minded. What

tı

n

as

th

fo

h

y

th

Wi

al

ag

the

aff

you

pui

tall

tab

mo

bef

it is

a li

kne

a fu

larg

fay you to a bottle of wine?

ORDINARY. I will drink no wine with an atheist. I should expect the devil to make a third in such company; for, since he knows you are his, he may be impatient to have his due.

JONATHAN. It is your business to drink with the

wicked, in order to amend them.

ORDINARY. I despair of it; and so I consign you

over to the devil, who is ready to receive you.

Jonathan. You are more unmerciful to me than the judge, Doctor. He recommended my foul to heaven; and it is your office to shew me the way this ther.

ORDINARY. No: The gates are barred against all

revilers of the clergy.

JONATHAN. I revile only the wicked ones, if any fuch are, which cannot affect you, who, if men were preferred in the church by merit only, would have long fince been a bishop. Indeed, it might raise any good man's indignation to observe one of your valt learning and abilities obliged to exert them in so low a sphere, when so thany of your inseriors wallow in wealth and preferment.

Ordinary. Why, it must be confessed, that there are bad men in all orders; but you should not censure too generally. I must own, I might have expected higher promotion; but I have learnt patience and resignation; and I would advise you to the same temper of mind, which, if you can attain, I know you will

will find mercy; nay, I do now promise you, you will. It is true, you are a finner; but your crimes are not of the blackest dye: You are no murderer, nor guilty of facrilege. And if you are guilty of theft, you make fome atonement by fuffering for it, which many others do not. Happy it is, indeed, for those few who are detected in their fins, and brought to exemplary punishment for them in this world. So far, therefore, from repining at your fate when you come to the tree, you should exult and rejoice in it; and, to say the truth, I question, whether to a wife man, the cataltrophe of many of those who die by a halter, is not more to be envied than pitied. Nothing is so fintul as fin, and murder is the greatest of all fins; it follows that whoever commits murder is happy in fullering for it; if therefore a man who commits murder is fo happy in dying for it, how much better must it be for you, who have committed a lefs crime?

JONATHAN. All this is very true; but let us take

a bottle of wine to cheer our spirits.

u

n

0

1-

Il

ny (

ere

ve

ny:

alt

W

in

ere

ire

ted

re-

m.

ou

lliy

ORDINARY. Why wine? Let me tell you, Mr Wild, there is nothing so deceitful as the spirits given us by wine. If you must drink, let us have a bowl of punch; a liquor I the rather prefer, as it is no where spoken against in scripture, and as it is more wholesome for the gravel; a distemper with which I am grievously afflicted.

Jonathan. (Having called for a bowl.) I ask your pardon, Doctor, I should have remembered, that punch was your favourite liquor. I think you never take wine while there is any punch remaining on the table.

ORDINARY. I confess, I look on punch to be the more eligible liquor, as well for the reasons I have before mentioned, as likewise for one other cause, viz. it is the properest for a DRAUGHT. I own I took it a little unkind of you to mention wine, thinking you knew my palate.

JONATHAN. You are in the right; and I will take

a swinging cup to your being made a bishop.

ORDINARY. And I will wish you a reprieve in as large a draught. Come, don't despair: it is yet time enough

enough to think of dying; you have good friends, who very probably may prevail for you. I have known many a man reprieved, who had less reason to expect it.

hopes, and be deceived, what then would become of

my foul?

ORDINARY. Pugh! Never mind your foul, leave that to me; I will render a good account of it, I war. rant you. I have a fermon in my pocket, which may be of some use to you to hear. I do not value myself on the talent of preaching, since no man ought to value himself for any gift in this world:—But, perhaps, there are not many such sermons.—But to proceed, since we have nothing else to do till the punch comes. —My text is the latter part of a verse only.

To the Greeks FOOLISHNESS.

ı

ir

cl

P

th

by

pi

fu

th

The occasion of these words was principally that philosophy of the Greeks which, at that time, had over-run great part of the heathen world, had poisoned, and as it were pussed up their minds with pride, so that they disregarded all kinds of doctrine in comparison of their own; and however safe, and however sound the learning of others might be, yet, if it any wife contradicted their own laws, customs, and received opinions, away with it, it is not for us. It was to the Greeks Footishness.

In the former part therefore of my discourse on these words, I shall principally confine myself to the laying open and demonstrating the great emptiness and vanity of this philosophy, with which these idle and absurd sophists were so proudly blown up and elevated:

And here I shall do two things: First, I shall ex-

abford philosophy.

And first, for the first of these, namely the matter. Now here we may retort the unmannerly word, which our adversaries have audaciously thrown in our faces; for what was all this mighty matter of philosophy, this heap of knowledge, which was to bring such large harvests

harvests of honour to those who sowed it, and so greatly and nobly to enrich the ground on which it fell; what was it but FOOLISHNESS? an inconfiftent heap of nonsense, of absurdities and contradictions, bringing no ornament to the mind in its theory, nor exhibiting any usefulness to the body in its practice. What were all the fermons and the fayings, the fables and the morals of all these wise men, but, to use the word mentioned in my text once more, Foolishness? What was their great master Plato, or their other great. light Aristotle? Both fools, mere quibblers and sophists, idly and vainly attached to certain ridiculous notions of their own, founded neither on truth nor on reason. Their whole works are a strange medley of the greatest fallehoods, scarce covered over with the colour of truth: their precepts are neither borrowed from nature, nor guided by reason: mere fictions, only to evince the dreadful height of human pride; in one word, Foot-ISHNESS. It may be, perhaps, expected of me, that I should give some instances from their works to prove this charge; but as to transcribe every passage to my purpose, would be to transcribe their whole works, and as in such a plentiful crop, it is difficult to chuse; instead of trespassing on your patience, I shall conclude this first bead with afferting what I have so fully proved, and what may, indeed, be inferred from the text, that the philosophy of the Greeks was Foot-ISHNESS.

Proceed we now, in the second place, to consider the manner in which this inane and simple doctrine was propagated. And here"—But here, the punch by entering waked Mr Wild, who was fast asleep, and put an end to the sermon; nor could we obtain any further account of the conversation which passed at this interview.

The Commission of the Contract of the Contract

and the extratorized per probability that the polyment of the

Carried Sound of the Burn to the facility to the surface of

Silving in the the remaining to the same trailing the same the same trailing to the same trailing trai

DI

id

e.

Z.

iis

er.

ch

s;

y,

ge

Its

C H A P. XIV.

Wild proceeds to the highest consummation of human GREATNESS.

HE day now drew nigh, when our great man was to exemplify the last and noblest act of greatness, by which any hero can fignalize himself. This was the day of execution, or confummation, or apotheolis (for it is called by different names) which was to give our hero an opportunity of facing death and damnation, without any fear in his heart, or at least without betraying any symptoms of it in his countenance. A completion of greatness which is heartily to be wished to every great man; nothing being more worthy of lamentation than when Fortune, like a lazy poet, winds up her catastrophe aukwardly, and bestowing too little care on her fifth act, dismisses the hero with a fneaking and private exit, who had in the former part of the drama performed fuch notable exploits, as must promise to every good judge among the spectators, a noble, public, and exalted end.

But she was resolved to commit no such error in this instance. Our hero was too much and too deservedly her savourite, to be neglected by her in his last moments: Accordingly all efforts for a reprieve were vain, and the name of Wild stood at the head of

those who were ordered for execution.

From the time he gave over all hopes of life, his conduct was truly great and admirable. Instead of shewing any marks of dejection or contrition, he rather insused more considence and assurance into his looks. He spent most of his hours in drinking with his friends, and with the good man above commemorated. In one of these compotations, being asked, whether he was asraid to die, he answered, 'd—n me, 'it is only a dance without music.' Another time, when one expressed some forrow for his missortune, as he termed it, he said, with great siercenes, 'a man can 'die but once.' Again, when one of his intimate acquaintance hinted his-hopes, that he would die like

man,

th

ed

to

at

cor

car

hin

as

bec

to

B

ung

mai

in

hov

trea

him

to 1

not

fide

call

ever

capi

mor

hear

tien

viole

as h

roon

his !

tion

deed

tende

m ar

A

a man, he cocked his hat in defiance, and cried out

greatly, Zounds! who's afraid?

S

of

is h ed, e,

ne

n

c-

e

n,

have retrieved any entire conversation which passed at this season, especially between our hero and his learned comforter; but we have searched many passeboard records in vain.

On the eve of his apotheosis, Wild's lady désired to see him, to which he consented. This meeting was at first very tender on both sides: but it could not continue fo: for unluckily some hints of former miscarriages intervening, as particularly when the asked him, how he could have used her so barbarously once, as calling her B--; and whether such language became a man, much less a gentleman, Wild flew into a violent passion, and swore she was the vilett of B -- s, to upbraid him at fuch a feason with an unguarded word spoke long ago. She replied, with many tears, the was well enough ferved for her folly in visiting such a brute; but the had one comfort however, that it would be the last time he could ever treat her fo; that indeed she had some obligations to him, for that his cruelty to her would reconcile her to the fate he was to-morrow to fuffer; and indeed, nothing but fuch brutality could have made the confideration of his shameful death (so this weak woman called hanging) which was now inevitable, to be borne even without madness. She then proceeded to a recapitulation of his faults in an exacter order, and with more perfect memory than one would have imagined her capable of; and, it is probable, would have rehearfed a complete catalogue, had not our hero's patience failed him, so that with the utmost fury and violence he caught her by the hair, and kicked her, as heartily as his chains would fuffer him, out of the room.

At length the morning came, which fortune at his birth had resolutely ordained for the consumuation of our hero's GREATNESS: He had himself indeed modelly declined the public honours she intended him, and had taken a quantity of laudanum, in order to retire quietly off the stage; but we have already

already observed, in the course of our wonderful his. tory, that to struggle against this lady's decrees is vain and impotent; and whether she hath determined you shall be hanged or be a prime minister, it is in either case lost labour to resist. Laudanum, therefore, being unable to stop the breath of our hero, which the fruit of hemp-feed, and not the spirit of poppey-feed, was to overcome, he was at the usual hour attended by the proper gentlemen appointed for that purpose, and acquainted that the cart was ready. On this occasion he exerted that greatness of courage, which hath been so much celebrated in other heroes; and knowing it was impossible to resid, he gravely declared, he would attend them. He then descended to that room where the fetters of great men are knocked off, in a most folemn and ceremonious manner. Then shaking hands with his friends (to wit, those who were conducting him to the tree) and drinking their healths in a bumper of brandy, he ascended the cart, where he was no sooner seated, than he received the acclamations of the multitude, who were highly ravilhed with his GREATNESS.

The cart now moved flowly on, being preceded by a troop of horse guards bearing javelins in their hands, through streets lined with crowds all admiring the great behaviour of our hero, who rode on, sometimes sighing, sometimes swearing, sometimes singing or

whiltling, as his humour varied.

When he came to the tree of glory, he was welcomed with an universal shout of the people, who were there assembled in prodigious numbers, to behold a fight much more rare in populous cities than one would reasonably imagine it should be, viz. the

proper catastrophe of a great man.

2

But the envy was, through fear, obliged to join the general voice in applause on this occasion, there were not wanting some who maligned this completion of glory, which was now about to be sulfilled to our hero, and endeavoured to prevent it by knocking him on the head as he stood under the tree, while the Ordinary was performing his last office. They therefore began to batter the cart with stones, brick-buts.

dirt

it

ch

th

W

pla

po

cal

W

Cro

dia

pla

as g

tru

dep

a de

the

who

grea

we

wan

worl

indu

and

with

his h

an in

be a

their

Na

dirt, and all manner of mischievous weapons, some of which erroneously playing on the robes of the ecclesiatic, made him so expeditious in his repetition, that with wonderful alacrity he had ended almost in an instant, and conveyed himself into a place of safety in an hackney coach, where he waited the conclusion with the temper of mind described in these verses.

Suave mari magna, turbantibus aquora ventis, E terra alterius magnum spectare laborem.

We must not, however, omit one circumstance, as it serves to shew the most admirable conservation of character in our hero to his last momen, which was, that whilst the ordinary was busied in his ejaculations, Wild, in the midst of the shower of stones, &c. which played upon him, applied his hands to the parson's pocket, and emptied it of his bottle screw, which he carried out of the world in his hand.

The ordinary being now descended from the cart, Wild had just opportunity to cast his eyes around the crowd, and to give them a hearty curse, when immediately the horses moved on, and with universal ap-

planse our hero swung out of this world.

b

er.

se

ng

he

V-

hly

by

ids,

the

mes

or

wel-

who

pe.

than

the

join

there

etion

our

him

e the

nere-

bats,

dirt

Thus fell Jonathan Wild the GREAT, by a death as glorious as his life had been, and which was fo truly agreeable to it, that the latter must have been deplorably maimed and imperfect without the former; a death which hath been alone wanting to complete. the characters of several ancient and modern heroes, whose histories would have been read with much greater pleasure by the wisest in all ages. Indeed we could almost wish, that whenever Fortune seems wantonly to deviate from her purpose, and leaves her work imperfect in this particular, the historian would indulge himself in the liberty of poetry and romance, and even do a violence to truth, to oblige his reader with a page, which must be the most delightful in all his history, and which could never fail of producing an instructive moral.

Narrow minds may possibly have some reason to be ashamed of going this way out of the world, if their consciences can sly in their faces, and assure them them they have not merited such an honour; but he must be a fool who is alhamed of being hanged, who is not weak enough to be ashamed of having deserved it.

C H A P. XV.

The character of our hero, and the conclusion of this history.

WE will now endeavour to draw the character of this Great man, and by bringing together those several seatures as it were of his mind, which ly scattered up and down in this history, to present

our readers with a perfect picture of greatness.

Jonathan Wild had every qualification necessary to form a great man. As his most powerful and predominant passion was ambition, so nature had, with consummate propriety, adapted all his faculties to the attaining those glorious ends to which this passion directed him. He was extremely ingenious in inventing designs, artful in contriving the means to accomplish his purposes, and resolute in executing them: for, as the most exquisite cunning and most undaunted boldness qualified him for any undertaking, so was he not restrained by any of those weaknesses which disappoint the views of mean and vulgar souls, and which are comprehended in one general term of honesty, which is a corruption of HONESTY, a word derived from what the Greeks call an Afs. He was entirely free from those low vices of modelty and goodnature, which, as he faid, implied a total negation of human greatness, and were the only qualities which absolutely rendered a man incapable of making a considerable figure in the world. His lust was inferior only to his ambition; but, as for what simple people call love, he knew not what it was. His avarice was immense; but it was of the rapacious not of the tenacious kind; his rapaciousness was indeed so violent, that nothing ever contented him but the whole; for, however confiderable the share was, which his coadjutors allowed him of a booty, he was restless in inventing means to make himself master of the smallest pit-

tance

tan

for

ty;

whe

this

ent

him

oth

no

whi

exp

alw

gre

thu

acti

whi

that

way

mu

nev

eve

hele

tem

and

his

feve

gre

Han

tance referved by them. He faid, laws were made for the use of Prigs only, and to secure their property; they were never therefore more perverted, than when their edge was turned against these, but that this generally happened through their want of fufficient dexterity. The character which he most valued himself upon, and which he principally honoured in others, was that of hypocrify. His opinion was, that no one could carry Priggifm very far without it; for which reason, he said, there was little greatness to be expected in a man who acknowledged his vices; but always much to be hoped from him, who professed great virtues: wherefore, though he would always thun the person whom he discovered guilty of a good action, yet he was never deterred by a good character, which was more commonly the effect of profession than of action: for which reason, he himself was always very liberal of honest professions, and had as much virtue and goodness in his mouth as a saint; never in the least scrupling to swear by his honour, even to those who knew him the best; nay, tho' he held good-nature and modesty in the highest contempt, he constantly practised the affectation of both, and recommended this to others, whose welfare, on his own account, he wished well to. He laid down several maxims, as the certain methods of attaining greatness, to which, in his own pursuit of it, he conflantly adhered. As,

I. Never to do more mischief to another, than was necessary to the effecting his purpose; for that mischief was too precious a thing to be thrown away.

2 To know no distinction of men from affection; but to facrifice all with equal readiness to his interest.

3. Never to communicate more of an affair than was necessary, to the person who was to execute it.

4. Not to trust him who hath deceived you nor who knows he hath been deceived by you.

5. To forgive no enemy; but to be cautious and often dilatory in revenge.

6. To shun poverty and distress, and to ally himfelf as close as possible to power and riches.

tha

no.

all

do

ha

or

or

ed.

th

th

yel

pla

pr

ty

an

co

10

mi

mi

gle

W

WI

hi

de

C

th

fa

fe

Ar

7. To maintain a constant gravity in his countenance and behaviour, and to affect wisdom on all occasions.

8. To foment eternal jealousies in his gang, one

of another.

9. Never to reward any one equal to his merit; but always to infinuate, that the reward was above it.

10. That all men were knaves or fools, and much the greater number a composition of both.

11. That a good name, like money, must be parted with, or at least greatly risqued, in order to

bring the owner any advantage.

12. That virtues, like precious stones, were easily counterfeited; that the counterfeits in both cases adorned the wearer equally, and that very sew had knowledge or discernment sufficient to distinguish the counterfeit jewel from the real.

13. That many men were undone by not going deep enough in roguery; as in gaming any man may be a loser who doth not play the whole

game.

14. That men proclaim their own virtues, as shop-keepers expose their goods, in order to profit by them.

15. That the heart was the proper seat of hatred, and the countenance of affection and friendship.

He had many more of the same kind, ali equally good with these, and which were after his decease found in his study, as the twelve excellent and celebrated rules were in that of King Charles the First; for he never promulgated them in his life-time, not having them constantly in his mouth, as some grave persons have the rules of virtue and morality, without paying the least regard to them in their actions: whereas our hero, by a constant and steady adherence to his rules in conforming every thing he did to them, acquired at length a settled habit of walking by them, till at last he was in no danger of inadvertently going out of the way; and by these means he arrived at that

that degree of greatness, which sew have equalled; none, we may say, have exceeded. For tho' it must be allowed that there have been some heroes, who have done greater mischiess to mankind, such as those who have betrayed the liberty of their country to others, or have undermined and over-powered it themselves; or conquerors who have impoverished, pillaged, sacked, burnt, and destroyed the countries and cities of their sellow creatures, from no other provocation than that of glory; i. e. as the tragic poet calls it,

a privilege to kill,

" A strong temptation to do bravely ill:"

yet, if we consider it in the light wherein actions are placed in this line,

Latius est, quoties magno tibi constat honestum, when we see our hero, without the least assistance or pretence, fetting himself at the head of a gang, which he had not any shadow of right to govern; if we: view him maintaining absolute power, and exercising tyranny over a lawless crew, contrary to all law, butthat of his own will; if we consider him setting up an open trade publickly, in defiance, not only of the: laws of his country, but of the common sense or his countrymen; if we see him first contriving the robbery of others, and again the defrauding the very robbers of that booty, which they had ventured their necks to acquire, and which without any hazard they might have retained: here sure he must appear admirable, and we may challenge not only the truth of history, but almost the latitude of fiction to equal his glory.

Nor had he any of those slaws in his character, which though they have been commended by weak writers, have (as I hinted in the beginning of this history) by the judicious reader been censured and despited. Such was the clemency of Alexander and Cæsar, which nature hath as grossy erred in giving them, as a painter would, who should dress a peasant in robes of states or give the nose, or any other seature of a Venus, to a satyr. What had the destroyers of mankind, that glorious pair one of whom

S 3

came:

came into the world to usurp the dominion, and abolish the constitution of his own country; the other to conquer, enflave, and rule over the whole world, at least as much as was well known to him, and the thortness of his life would give him leave to visit: what had, I fay, fuch as these to do with clemency? Who cannot see the absurdity and contradiction of mixing fuch an ingredient with those noble and great qualities I have before mentioned? Now in Wild, every thing was truly great, almost without alloy, as his imperfections (for furely some small ones he had) were only fuch as ferved to denominate him a human creature, of which kind none ever arrived at confummate excellence: but furely his whole behaviour to his friend Heartfree is a convincing proof, that the true iron or steel greatness of his heart was not debased by any softer metal. Indeed while greatness consists in power, pride, insolence, and doing mischief to mankind; -to speak out-while a great man and a great rogue are fynonimous terms, so long shall Wild stand unrivalled on the pinnacle of GREATNESS. Nor must we omit here, as the finishing of his character, what indeed ought to be remembered on his tomb or his statue, the conformity above mentioned of his death to his life; and that Jonathan Wild the Great, after all his mighty exploits, was, what so few Great men can accomplish-hanged by the neck till he was dead.

Having thus brought our hero to this conclusion, it may be fatisfactory to some readers (for many, I doubt not, carry their concern no farther than his fate) to know what became of Heartfree. We shall acquaint them, therefore, that his fufferings were now at an end; that the good magistrate eatily prevailed for his pardon, nor was contented till he had made him all the reparation he could for all his troubles, tho' the share he had in bringing these upon him, was not only innocent, but from its motive laudable. He procured the restoration of the jewels from the man of war, at her return to England, and, above all, omitted no labour to restore Heartfree to his reputation, and to persuade his neighbours, acquain-

tance,

m

P

a

fh

fo

fh

in

ra

fu

ry

da

fa

po

ric

C

fre

W

on

gr

tance, and customers of his innocence. When the commission of bankruptcy was satisfied, Heartfree had a considerable sum remaining; for the diamond prefented to his wife was of prodigious value, and infinitely recompensed the loss of those jewels which Miss Straddle had disposed of. He now set up again in his trade; compassion for his unmerited misfortunes brought him many cultomers among those who had any regard to humanity; and he hath, by induttry joined with parfimony, amassed a considerable fortune. His wife and he are now grown old in the purest love and friendship: but never had another child. Friendly married his elder daughter at the age of nineteen, and became his partner in trade. As to the younger, she never would listen to the addresses of any lover, not even of a young nobleman, who offered to take her with two thousand pounds, which her father would have willingly produced, and indeed did his utmost to persuade her to the match : but the refused absolutely, nor would give any other reason when Heartfree pressed her, than that she had dedicated her days to his service, and was refolved, no other duty should interfere with that which she owed the best of fathers, nor prevent her from being the nurse of his old age.

Thus Heartfree, his wife, his two daughters, his fonin-law, and his grand-children, of which he hath several, live altogether in one house; and that with such amity and affection towards each other, that they are in the neighbourhood called the family of love.

11

115

all

re

e.

ad

es,

as

le.

he

ve

eaAs to all the other persons mentioned in this history, in the light of greatness, they had all the fate adapted to it, being every one hanged by the neck, save two, viz. Miss Theodosia Snap, who was transported to America, where the was pretty well married, resormed, and made a good wise; and the Count, who recovered of the wound he had received from the hermit, and made his escape into France, where he committed a robbery, was taken, and broke on the wheel.

Indeed, whoever confiders the common fate of great men must allow, they well deserve and hardly earn for, when we reflect on the labours and pains, the cares, disquietudes, and dangers, which attend their road to greatness, we may say with the divine, 'That a man may go to heaven with half the pains which it costs him to purchase hell.' To say the truth, the world have this reason at least to honour such characters as that of Wild; that while it is in the power of every man to be perfectly honest, not one in a thousand is capable of being a complete rogue; and sew indeed there are who, if they were inspired with the vanity of imitating our hero, would not after much fruitless pains be obliged to own themselves inserior to Mr. Jonathan Whild the Great.

entired and lover, not even of a volume decisions.

berg word army that will take by by by both oney in a

cong a paralle was the we ton the west the doc. Maring

an used Selection of the first that the best beautiful and beautiful and the best of the beautiful and the best of the best of the beautiful and the best of the beautiful and the beautiful and

and the first the contract of the contract of the contract of the contract of

and found and helicity port out a metal motor motor was

the best days about the contract of the party and between the best and

ning with this creation blooms with the common boying

and more that the bear print and the few of the print but

the state of the colored between the color tendent bas seed-

in Law, and his property and description in the military and and

well from the william appearance in the first from the first world that

in that it becomes a little with the man

which have all a speed that well it will have save and

-The Will Printer and the state of the state of the state of

and the second of the second o

Be this the trace of the way to the temperature of the temperature of

Louisian and the the state of the state of the state of

The state of the s

limited; who ever confidence the constraint wife and

with the beautiful the series and the major and the series of the series

the tree structure in enc profice that ever

word to the part with a like terral poorly in was a low

the state of the same so countries and

A JOUR-

the little below the

JOURNEY

FROM

This WORLD to the next, &cc.

accompany the latest the second of the second of the second of the second of

disquisitions are a re-

the first first for the first many the court of the southern the rest of the

navy action is become and state out of our first in the first section of

ENTER REPORT OF THE PARTY OF TH

STATE OF A STATE OF THE STATE O

A Section of the Action

AND THE RESERVE OF THE PARTY OF

m in th

wi ac fio

ma tich bot nef gib

har eve fro Skr whi

par gar mal and the state band the reformation

MORTS UNO ONTERION

that of the sound is at the author of the second all applies

entitle) ander to strong a sodortist parties on the

INTRODUCTION.

the dream or vision of some very pious and holy person; or whether they were really written in the other world, and sent back to this, which is the opinion of many, (though I think, too much inclining to superstition;) or lastly, whether, as infinitely the greatest part imagine, they were really the production of some choice inhabitant of New-Bethlehem, is not necessary nor easy to determine. It will be abundantly sufficient, if I give the reader an account by what means they came into my possession.

Mr Robert Powney, stationer, who dwells oppofite to Catherine Street in the Strand, a very honest man, and of great gravity of countenance; who, among other excellent stationary commodities, is particularly eminent for his pens, which I am abundantly bound to acknowledge, as I owe to their peculiar goodness, that my manuscripts have by any means been legible; this gentleman, I say, furnished me some time fince with a bundle of those pens, wrapt up with great care and caution, in a very large sheet of paper, full of characters, written as it seemed in a very bad hand. Now, I have a furprising curiosity to read every thing which is almost illegible; partly, perhaps, from the sweet remembrance of the dear Scrawls, Skrawls, or Skrales, (for the word is variously spelt) which I have in my youth received from that lovely part of the creation for which I have the tenderest regard; and partly from that temper of mind which makes men set an immense value on old manuscripts

THE INTRODUCTION.

so effaced, bustos so maimed, and pictures so black, that no one can tell what to make of them. I therefore perused this sheet with wonderful application, and in about a day's time discovered that I could not understand it. I immediately repaired to Mr Powney, and inquired very eagerly, whether he had not more of the same manuscript. He produced about one hundred pages, acquainting me that he had faved no more; but that the book was originally a huge folio, had been left in his garret by a gentleman who lodged there, and who had left him no other fatisfaction for nine months lodging. He proceeded to inform me, that the manuscript had been hawked about (as he phrased it) among all the booksellers, who refused to meddle; fome alledged that they could not read, others that they could not understand it Some would have it to be an atheistical book, and some that it was a libel on the government; for one or other of which reafons, they all refused to print it. That it had been likewise shewn to the R -- Society, but they shook their heads, faying, there was nothing in it wonderful enough for them. That hearing the gentleman was gone to the West-Indies, and believing it to be good for nothing else, he had used it as waste paper. He faid, I was welcome to what remained, and he was heartily forry for what was mitting, as I feemed to fet fome value on it.

I defired him much to name a price: but he would receive no confideration farther than the payment of a finall bill I owed him, which at that time he said he

looked on as fo much money given him.

I presently communicated this manuscript to my friend parson Abraham Adams, who, after a long and careful perusal, returned it me with his opinion, that there was more in it than at first appeared; that the author seemed not entirely unacquainted with the writings of Plato; but he wished he had quoted him sometimes in his margin, that I might be sure (said he) he had read him in the original; for nothing, continued the parson, is commoner than for men now a days to pretend to have read Greek authors, who have met with them only in translations; and cannot conjugate a verb in mi.

To

n

he

ar

fo

de

no

of

THE INTRODUCTION.

To deliver my own fentiments on the occasion, I think the author discovers a philosophical turn of thinking, with some little knowledge of the world, and no very inadequate value of it. There are some indeed, who, from the vivacity of their temper, and the happiness of their station, are willing to consider its blesfings as more substantial, and the whole to be a scene of more consequence than it is here represented; but without controverting their opinions at prefent, the number of wife and good men, who have thought with our author, are sufficient to keep him in countenance; nor can this be attended with any ill inference, fince he every where teaches this moral, That the greatest and truest happiness which this world affords, is to be found only in the possession of goodness and virtue; a doctrine, which as it is undoubtedly true, so hath it so noble and practical a tendency, that it can never be too often or too frongly inculcated on the minds of men.

on site aditional in somethickers in

said on a second laborate built band aged Livel ab

g 17 d almoi d'in den bedeureu maccamitat de abenis P

in the four that the partition against a property and a confident

to cook at Thor one this water return the state of the st

promise the contract of the contract of the second promise of the contract of

And the Management of the Tally of Analysis and the Control of the

the time that the control of the best tall the

to be the amount of the real and the second of the least to the least the le

and the end to two boulders a cumulation to the same

a hopeoperation

of the Harry Mark William Like a Charles of the Land Service

To the first order out the horse of a decidar confidence of the first of the first

tradical to the supplier and the property on a second and

the proof area can income an aid blanc, Land

to an extend the adjusting of neither religion to

the court of the state of the court was important

to all referred a continuity of telephone the contract portion

the problem with the second state of the second

1.

n

ul

as

od

le

28

let

ıld

he

my

La

hat

the

the

nim

he)

nu-

lays

met

gate

To

0 1

.

A JOUR.

JOURNEY

FROM

This WORLD to the Next, &c.

BOOK I.

C H A P. I.

The author dies, meets with Mercury, and is by him conducted to the stuge which sets out for the other world.

N the first day of December, 1741 *, I departed this life, at my lodgings in Cheapfide. My body had been some time dead before I was at liberty to quit it, lest it should by any accident return to life. This is an injunction imposed on all fouls by the eternal law of fate, to prevent the inconveniencies which would follow. As foon as the destined period was expired (being no longer than till the body is become persectly cold and stiff) I began to move; but found inyself under a difficulty of making my escape, for the mouth, or door, was shut; so that it was impossible for me to go out at it: and the windows, vulgarly called the eyes, were so closely pulled down by the fingers of a nurse, that I could by no means open them. At last, I perceived a beam of light glimmering at the top of the house, (for such I may call the body I had been inclosed in) whither ascending, I gently let myself down through a kind of chimney, and issued out of the nostrils. en haps to properly adapted to a

No

fite

geo

yea

+ 11

bein

rell

old

hen

her

I ha

the

ope

felf

bita

I ca

myl

ing

I w

onc

I

you

his

his

befo

calle

depa

m

m

' be

' im

the

Itanc

corpo

theat

was-1

drive

^{*} Some doubt whether this should not be rather 1641, which is a date more agreeable to the account given of it in the introduction; but then there are some passages which seem to relate to transactions infinitely later, even within this year or two.—To say the truth, there are difficulties attend either conjecture; so the reader may take which he pleases.

No prisoner discharged from a long confinement, ever tasted the sweets of liberty with a more exquisite relish, than I enjoyed in this delivery from a dungeon wherein I had been detained upwards of forty years, and with much the same kind of regard I cast

+ my eyes backwards upon it.

178

er

ed

10-

li-

to

he

ch

·x.

me

nd

the

ble

al-

At

top

een

OWN

rils.

nich

tro-

e to

-To

fo

No

My friends and relations had all quitted the room, being all (as I plainly overheard) very loudly quarrelling below stairs about my will; there was only an old woman left above, to guard the body, as I apprehend. She was in a fast sleep, occasioned, as from her favour it feemed, by a comfortable dose of gin. I had no pleasure in this company, and therefore, as the window was wide open, I fallied forth into the open air: but to my great astonishment found myfelf unable to fly, which I had always during my habitation in the body conceived of spirits; however, I came so lightly to the ground, that I did not hurt myself; and though I had not the gift of flying (owing probably to my having neither feathers nor wings). I was capable of hopping fuch a prodigious way at once, that it served my turn almost as well.

I had not hopped far, before I perceived a tall young gentleman in a filk waistcoat, with a wing on his left heel, a garland on his head, and a caduceus in his right hand ‡. I thought I had feen this perfon before, but had not time to recollect where, when he called out to me, and asked me how long I had been departed. I answered, I was just come forth. 'You' must not stay here,' replied he, 'unless you had been murdered; in which case, indeed, you might have been suffered to walk some time: but if you died a natural death, you must set out for the other world immediately.' I desired to know the way. 'O,' cried the gentleman, 'I will shew you to the inn whence

† Eyes are not perhaps so properly adapted to a spiritual substance: but we are here, as in many other places, obliged to use torporeal terms to make ourselves the better understood.

This is the dress in which the god appears to mortals at the theatres. One of the offices attributed to this god by the ancients, was to collect the ghosts as a shepherd doth a slock of sheep, and drive them with his wand into the other world.

the stage proceeds; for I am the porter. Perhaps

Sir,' faid I, 'I have feen you at the playhouse.' Upon which he smiled, and without satisfying me, as to that point, walked directly forward, bidding me hop after him. I obeyed him, and soon sound myself in Warwick-Lane; where Mercury, making a full stop, pointed at a particular house, where he bad me enquire for the stage, and wishing me a good journey, took his leave, saying, he must go seek after other customers.

I arrived just as the coach was setting out, and sound I had no occasion for enquiry: for every person seemed to know my business, the moment I appeared at the door: the coachman told me, his horses were to, but that he had no place left; however, though there were already fix, the passengers offered to make room for me. I thanked them, and ascended without much ceremony. We immediately began our journey, being seven in number; for as the women wore no hoops, three of them were but equal to two men.

Perhaps, reader, thou may'ft be pleafed with an account of this whole equipage, as peradventure than wilt not, while alive, fee any fuch. The coach was made by an eminent toyman, who is well known to deal in immaterial substance, that being the matter of which it was compounded. The work was so entremely fine that it was entirely invisible to the human eye. The horses which drew this extraordinary vehicle were all spiritual, as well as the passengers. They had, indeed, all died in the service of a certain post-master; and as for the coachman, who was a very thin piece of immaterial substance, he had the honour while alive of driving the Great Peter, or Peter the Great, in whose service his soul, as well as body, was almost starved to death.

Such was the vehicle in which I set out, and now, those who are not willing to travel on with me, may, if they please, stop here; those who are, must proceed to the subsequent chapters, in which this jour

ney is continued,

CHAR

b

fe

W

tl

L

to

fu

CO

be

OI

co

m

po

OV

it

lov

.

. t

· t

17

F

A fi

· y

n

he,

· d

n

· a

(

out

not

CHAP. II.

In which the author first refutes some idle opinions concerning spirits, and then the passengers relate their several deaths.

T is the common opinion, that spirits, like owls, can see in the dark; nay, and can then most easily be perceived by others. For which reason, many persons of good understanding, to prevent being terrified with such objects, usually keep a candle burning by them, that the light may prevent their seeing. Mr Locke, in direct opposition to this, hath not doubted to affert that you may see a spirit in open day-light

full as well as in the darkest night.

ac

to

op

in

p,

n.

ey,

192

ind

er-

ap-

ries

ver,

ered

ded

our

men

two

1 20

hou

Was

n to

er of

ex+

hu.

inary

1gers.

rtain

was a

d the

er, or

vell as

now,

may,

t pro-

jour-

A P.

It was very dark when we fet out from the inn, nor could we fee any more than if every foul of us had been alive. We had travelled a good way, before any one offered to open his mouth: indeed, most of the company were fast afleep 1: but as I could not close my own eyes, and perceived the spirit, who sat opposite to me, to be likewise awake, I began to make overtures of conversation, by complaining how dark it was. ' And extremely cold too,' answered my fellow-traveller, 'though I thank God, as I have no body, I feel no inconvenience from it: But you will ' believe, Sir, that this frosty air must seem very sharp to one just issued forth out of an oven: for such was 'the inflamed habitation I am lately departed from.' ' How did you come to your end, Sir?' faid I. 'I ' was murdered, Sir,' answered the gentleman. I am ' furprised then,' replied I, ' that you did not divert ' yourself by walking up and down, and playing some ' merry tricks with the murderer.' 'Oh, Sir,' returned he, ' I had not that privilege, I was lawfully put to death. In short, a physician set me on fire, by giving ' me medicines to throw out my distemper. I died of a hot regimen, as they call it, in the small pox.

One of the spirits at that word started up, and cried out, 'The small pox! bless me! I hope I am not in

T 3

company

[†] Those who have read of the gods sleeping in Homer, willnot be surprised at this happening to spirits.

company with that distemper, which I have all my life with fuch caution avoided, and have so happily escaped hitherto!' This fright set all the passengers who were awake into a loud laughter; and the gentle. man recollecting himself with some confusion, and not without blufhing, asked pardon, crying, I protest I dreamt that I was alive.' 'Perhaps, Sir,' faid I, 'you died of that distemper, which therefore made so ftrong an impression on you.' No, Sir,' answered he, 'I never had it in my life; but the continual dreadful apprehension it kept me so long under, cannot I fee be so immediately eradicated. You must know, Sir, I avoided coming to London for thirty years together, for fear of the small pox, till the most ur-' gent business brought me thither about five days ago. I was so dreadfully afraid of this disease, that I refused the second night of my arrival to sup with a friend, whose wife had recovered of it several months before, and the fame evening got a furfeit by eating too many muscles, which brought me into this good company.

'I will lay a wager,' cried the spirit who sat next him, there is not one in the coach able to guess my distemper.' I defired the favour of him to acquaint us with it, if it was so uncommon. 'Why, Sir,' said he, 'I died of honour.'- 'Of honour, Sir!' repeated I, with some surprize. 'Yes, Sir,' answered the spi-

rit, ' of honour, for I was killed in a duel.'

· For my part,' faid a fair spirit, ' I was inoculated s last fummer, and had the good fortune to escape with a very few marks in my face. I esteemed myfelf now perfectly happy, as I imagined I had no restraint to a full enjoyment of the diversions of the town; but within a few days after my coming up,

I caught cold by over-dancing myself at a ball, and

· last night died of a violent fever.'

After a short silence, which now ensued, the fair spirit who spoke last, it being now day-light, addressed. herself to a female, who sat next her, and asked her to what chance they owed the happiness of her company, She answered, the apprehended to a consumption: but the physicians were not agreed concerning her distem-

per,

m

de

pe

w

th

Wa

lar

lo

off

fw

an

mo

all

del

of

and

Ha

fm

not

ter

fen

tog

loo

fail

rec

a v

ten

pro

of q

to t

we'

hope

we a

per, for she left two of them in a very hot dispute about it, when the came out of her body. And pray, Madam,' faid the same spirit to the fixth passenger, how came you to leave the other world?' But that female spirit screwing up her mouth, answered, she wondered at the curiofity of some people; that perhaps persons had already heard some reports of her death, which were far from being true: that whatever was the occasion of it, she was glad at being delivered from a world, in which the had no pleafure, and where there was nothing but nonsense and impertinence; particularly among her own fex, whose loose conduct the had long been entirely ashamed of.

d

d

d

0

It

The beauteous spirit perceiving her question gave offence, pursued it no farther. - She had indeed all the fweetness and good-humour, which are so extremely amiable (when found) in that fex, which tenderneis most exquisitely becomes. Her countenance displayed all the chearfulness, the good-nature, and the modesty, which diffuse such brightness round the beauty of Seraphina +, awing every beholder with respect, and, at the same time, ravishing him with admiration. Had it not been indeed for our convertation on the fmall-pox, I thould have imagined we had been honoured with her identical presence. This opinion might have been heightened by the good sense the uttered, whenever the spoke; by the delicacy of her fentiments, and the complacence of her behaviour, together with a certain dignity, which attended every look, word, and gesture; qualities which could not fail making an impression on a heart ‡ so capable of receiving it as mine, nor was she long in raising in me a very violent degree of seraphic love. I do not intend by this, that fort of love which men are very properly faid to make to women in the lower world,

State of the National State of the State of + A particular lady of quality is meant here; but every lady of quality, or no quality, are welcome to apply this character to themselves.

We have before made an apology for this language, which we here repeat for the last time: though the heart may, we hope, be metaphorically used here with more propriety, than when we apply those passions to the body which belong to the foul.

and which feldom lasts any longer than while it is making. I mean by seraphic love, an extreme delicacy and tenderness of friendship, of which, my worthy reader, if thou hast no conception, as it is probable thou may'st not, my endeavour to instruct thee would be as fruitless, as it would be to explain the most dissicult problems of Sir Isaac Newton, to one ignorant of

vulgar arithmetic.

To return therefore to matters comprehensible by all understandings; the discourse now turned on the vanity, folly, and misery of the lower world, from which every passenger in the coach expressed the highest satisfaction in being delivered: though it was very remarkable, that notwithstanding the joy we declared at our death, there was not one of us who did not mention the accident which occasioned it, as a thing we would have avoided if we could. Nay, the very grave lady herself, who was the forwardest in testifying her delight, confessed inadvertently, that she left a physician by her bed side. And the gentleman, who died of honour, very liberally cursed both his folly and his fencing. While we were entertaining ourselves with these matters, on a sudden a most offensive smell began to invade our nostrils. This very much resembled the savour, which travellers, in summer, perceive at their approach to that beautiful village of the Hague, arising from those delicious canals, which, as they confift of standing water, do at that time emit odours greatly agreeable to a Dutch talle, but not so pleasant to any other. Those perfumes, with the affiftance of a fair wind, begin to affect perfons of quick olfactory nerves at a league's distance, and increase gradually as you approach. In the same manner did the smell I have just mentioned more and more invade us, till one of the spirits, looking out of the coach-window, declared we were just arrived at a very large city: and indeed he had scarce faid fo, before we found ourselves in the suburbs, and at the same time, the coachman being asked by another, informed us, that the name of this place was the City of Diseases. The road to it was extremely smooth, and, excepting the abovementioned favour, delight.

d

T

ty

aı

th

fo

in

W

m

it,

delightfully pleasant. The fireets of the suburbs were lined with bagnios, taverns, and cooks shops; in the first we faw several beautiful women, but in tawdry drefles, looking out of the windows; and in the latter, were vifibly exposed all kinds of the richest dainties: but on our entering the city, we found, contrary to all we had feen in the other world, that the suburbs were infinitely pleasanter than the city itself. It was indeed a very dull, dark, and melancholy place. Few people appeared in the streets, and these, for the most part, were old women, and here and there a formal grave gentleman, who feemed to be thinking, with large tyewigs on, and amber-headed canes in their hands. were all in hopes, that our vehicle would not stop here; but to our forrow the coach foon drove into an inp. and we were obliged to alight.

16

m

1.

ry

ed

ot

ng

ry

y-

eft

ın,

his

ng

of-

ery

m-

vil-

als,

hat

fte,

es,

er-

ce,

me

ore

ing

ar.

arce

and

an.

was

nely

our,

ght-

The College And P. to III. to de to formis

vital side a ratio of the contract of the same and

The adventures we met with in the City of Diseases.

W it seems we were to spend the remainder of the day, before our host acquainted us, that it was customary for all spirits, in their passage through that city, to pay their respects to that lady Disease, to whose assistance they had owed their deliverance from the lower world. We answered, we should not fail in any complaifance, which was usual to others; upon which our host replied, he would immediately send porters to conduct us. He had not long quitted the room, before we were attended by some of those grave persons, whom I have before described in large tye-wigs, with amber-headed canes. These gentlemen are the ticket-porters in this city, and their canes are the insignia, or tickets denoting their office. We informed them of the several ladies, to whom we were obliged, and were preparing to follow them, when on a sudden they all started at one another, and left us in a hurry, with a frown on every countenance. We were furprised at this behaviour, and presently summoned the hoft, who was no sooner acquainted with it, than he burst into a hearty laugh, and told us the reason was, because we did not see the gentlemen the moment they came in, according to the custom of the place. We answered with some confusion, we had brought nothing with us from the other world, which we had been all our lives informed was not lawful to do. 'No, no, master,' replied the host, 'I am apprized of that, and indeed it was my fault. I should have first fent you to my Lord Scrape +; who would ' have supplied you with what you want.' ' My Lord Scrape supply us!' faid I wish astonishment: 'Sure you must know we cannot give him fecurity; and I am convinced he never lent a shilling without it in his life.' 'No, Sir,' answered the host, ' and for . that reason he is obliged to do it here, where he is sentenced to keep a bank, and to distribute money gratis to all passengers. This bank originally confifted of just that sum, which he had miserably hoarded up in the other world, and he is to perceive it decrease visibly one shilling a day, till it is totally exhausted: after which, he is to return to the other world, and perform the part of a miler for seventy · years; and then being purified in the body of a Hog, he is to enter the human species again, and take a · second trial.' · Sir,' said I, · you tell me wonders: · but if his bank be to decrease only a shilling a-day, how can he furnish all passengers?' 'The rest,' answered the host, ' is supplied again; but in a mane ner, which I cannot easily explain to you.' I apprehend, faid I, this distribution of his money is ' inflicted on him as a punithment; but I do not see how it can answer that end, when he knows it to be reflored to him again. Would it not serve the pur-· pose as well, if he parted only with the fingle shilling, which it feems is all he is really to lose?' 'Sir,' cries the hoft, when you observe the agonies with which he parts with every guinea, you will be of another opinion. No prisoner condemned to death · ever begged fo heartily for transportation, as he,

† That we may mention it once for all, in the panegyrical part of this work, some particular person is always meant, but in the satirical nobody.

when

a

dif

ha

ch

tur

(in

wh

the

inf

fal

4 1

s t

1 1

· 1

He

beg

air

he

fo

tha

ter

ged

me

to

flec

Ir

he

· t

· b

ly

nif

me

when he received his fentence, did to go to hell, provided he might carry his money with him. But you will know more of these things, when you arrive at the upper world; and now, if you please, I will attend you to my Lord's, who is obliged to supply

you with whatever you defire.'

d

1

y

1.

d.

it

ly

er

ty

2

s:

ıy,

ft,

m.

p-

115

fee

be

ur-

ng,

ir,

ith

an-

ath

he,

ical

but

nen

We found his Lordship sitting at the upper end of a table, on which was an immense such of money, disposed in several heaps, every one of which would have purchased the honour of some patriots, and the chastity of some prudes. The moment he saw us, he turned pale, and fighed, as well apprehending our bufiness. Mine host accosted him with a familiar air, which at first surprised me, who so well remembered the respect I had formerly seen paid this lord, by men infinitely superior in quality to the person who now faluted him in the following manner: 'Here, you ' lord, and be dam-d to your little fneaking foul, tell out your money, and supply your betters with ' what they want. Be quick, sirrah, or I'll fetch the beadle to you. Don't fancy yourfelf in the lower 'world again, with your privilege at your a--! He then shook a cane at his Lordship, who immediately began to tell out his money with the same miserable air and face, which the mifer on our stage wears while he delivers his bank-bills. This affected some of us fo much, that we had certainly returned with no more than what would have been sufficient to fee the porters, had not our hoft, perceiving our compassion, begged us not to spare a fellow, who in the midst of immenie wealth had always refused the least contribution to charity. Our hearts were hardened with the reflection, and we all filled our pockets with his money. I remarked a poetical spirit in particular, who swore he would have a hearty gripe at him: ' For,' fays he, ' the rascal not only resused to subscribe to my works, but fent back my letter unanswered, though I am a ' better gentleman than himself.'

We now returned from this miserable object, greatly admiring the propriety as well as justice of his punishment, which consisted, as our host informed us, merely in the delivering forth his money; and he ob-

ferved,

ferved, we could not wonder at the pain this gave him, fince it was as reasonable that the bare parting with money should make him miserable, as that the bare having money without using it should have made him

happy.

Other tye-wig porters (for those we had summoned before refused to visit us again) now attended us; and we having feed them the instant they entered the room, according to the instructions of our host, they bowed and smiled, and offered to introduce us to whatever

difease we pleased.

We fet out feveral ways, as we were all to pay our respects to different ladies. I directed my porter to shew me to the Fever on the Spirits, being the disease which had delivered me from the flesh. My guide and I traversed many streets, and knocked at several doors, but to no purpose. At one we were told lived the Consumption; at another, the Maladie Alamode, a French lady; at the third, the Dropfy; at the fourth, the Rheumatism; at the fifth, Intemperance; at the fixth, Misfortune. I was tired, and had exhausted my patience, and almost my purse; for I gave my porter a new fee at every blunder he made: when my guide, with a folemn countenance told me, he could do no more; and marched off without any farther ceremony.

He was no sooner gone, than I met another gentleman with a ticket, i. e. an amber-headed cane in his hand. I first feed him, and then acquainted him with the name of the disease. He cast himself for two or three minutes into a thoughtful posture, then pulled a piece of paper out of his pocket, on which he writ fomething in one of the oriental languages, I believe; for I could not read a syllable: he bad me carry it to fuch a particular shop, and telling me it would do

my business, he took his leave.

Secure, as I now thought myself of my direction, I went to the shop, which very much resembled an apothecary's. The person who officiated, having read the paper, took down about twenty different jars, and pouring fomething out of every one of them, made

a mix-

2 11

ing

wer

eler

Iw

tha

dru

wit

find

wh

tha

a f

dife

had

Was

the

qua

Ma

lige

my

one

city

tree

tren

an

buff

ther

wer

diec

ed t

per

quii

had

low

face

beer

had

lieve

fron

ceiv

217

a mixture, which he delivered to me in a bottle, having first tied a paper round the neck of it, on which were written three or four words, the last containing eleven syllables. I mentioned the name of the disease I wanted to find out; but received no other answer, than that he had done as he was ordered, and the

drugs were excellent.

h

n

d

d

n,

d

er

ur

to

ise

de

ral

ed

de,

th,

he

my

-10

my

uld

ce-

tle-

his

ich

10

da

vrit

ve;

y it

do

ion,

an

ead

and

nade

mix-

I began now to be enraged, and quitting the shop with some anger in my countenance, I intended to sind out my inn: but meeting in the way a porter, whose countenance had in it something more pleasing than ordinary, I resolved to try once more, and clapt a see into his hand. As soon as I mentioned the disease to him, he laughed heartily, and told me I had been imposed on: for in reality, no such disease was to be found in that city. He then enquired into the particulars of my case, and was no sooner acquainted with them, than he informed me that the Maladie Alamode was the lady to whom I was obliged. I thanked him, and immediately went to pay

my respects to her.

The house, or rather palace, of this lady, was one of the most beautiful and magnificent in the city. The avenue to it was planted with fycamore trees, with beds of flowers on each fide; it was extremely pleasant, but short. I was conducted through a magnificent hall, adorned with several statues and bustoes, most of them maimed, whence I concluded them all to be true antiquities: but was informed they were the figures of several modern heroes, who had died martyrs to her ladythip's cause. I next mounted through a large painted stair-case, where several persons were depictured in caricatura; and upon enquiry was told they were the portraits of those who had distinguished themselves against the lady in the lower world. I suppose, I should have known the faces of many physicians and furgeons, had they not been so violently distorted by the painter. Indeed, he had exerted so much malice in his work, that I believe he had himself received some particular favours from the lady of this manfion. It is difficult to conteive a group of Aranger figures. I then entered a long

reli

aut

e if

h

· n

wil

ule

and

and

tint

fhor

visi

ente

nan

Cha

gen

littl

lady

quit

me

one

to I

very

for

muc

then

Subject

taki

he .

foun

vehi

pani

proc

kpros

long room hung round with the pictures of women of such exact shapes and features, that I should have thought myself in a gallery of beauties, had not a certain fallow paleness in their complexions given me a more distasteful idea. Through this, I proceeded to a second apartment, adorned, if I may so call it, with the figures of old ladies. Upon my feeming to admire at this furniture, the servant told me with a fmile, that these had been very good friends of his lady, and had done her eminent service in the lower world. I immediately recollected the faces of one or two of my acquaintance, who had formerly kept bagnio's: but was very much furprized to fee the resemblance of a lady of great distinction in such company. The fervant, upon my mentioning this, made no other answer than that his lady had pictures of all degrees and on other the

I was now introduced into the presence of the lady herself. She was a thin, or rather meagre person, very wan in the countenance, had no nofe, and many pimples in her face. She offered to rife at my entrance, but could not stand. After many compliments, much congratulation on her fide, and the molt fervent expressions of gratitude on mine, the asked me many queltions concerning the fituation of her affairs in the lower world; most of which I answered to her intire fatisfaction. At last, with a kind of forced fmile, she said, ' I suppose the Pill and Drop go on ' fwimmingly.' I told her they were reported to have done great cures. She replied, she could apprehend no danger from any person, who was not of regular practice; for however simple mankind are, faid she, or however afraid they are of death, they prefer dying in a regular manner to being cured by a nof-' trum.' She then express'd great pleasure at the account I gave her of the beau monde. She faid, the had, herfelf, removed the hundreds of Drury to the hundreds of Charing-cross, and was very much delighted to find they had spread into St James's; that the imputed this chiefly to several of her dear and worthy friends, who had lately published their excellent works, endeavouring to extirpate all notions of religion religion and virtue; and particularly to the deserving author of the Batchelor's Estimate, 'to whom,' said she, if I had not reason to think he was a surgeon, and had therefore written from mercenary views, I could never sufficiently own my obligations.' She spoke likewise greatly in a probation of the method so generally used by parents, of marrying children very young, and without the least affection between the parties; and concluded by saying, that if these sashions continued to spread, she doubted not but she should shortly be the only disease who would ever receive a visit from any person of considerable rank.

While we were discoursing, her three daughters entered the room. They were all called by hard names: the eldest was named t Lepra, the second Chæras, and the third Scorbuija. They were all genteel, but ugly. I could not help observing the little respect they paid their parent; which the old lady remarking in my countenance, as foon as they quitted the room; which foon happened, acquainted me with her unhappiness in her offspring, every one of which had the confidence to deny themselves to be her children, though the faid the had been a very indulgent mother, and had plentifully provided for them all. As family complaints generally as much tire the hearer, as they relieve him who makes them, when I found her launching farther into this subject, I resolved to put an end to my visit; and taking my leave, with many thanks for the favour he had done me, I returned to the inn, where I found my fellow-travellers just mounting into their vehicle. I shook hands with my host, and accompanied them into the coach, which immediately after proceeded on its journey.

these ladies, I believe by their names, presided over the kprosy, king's-evil, and survy.

the property and behavior composition below with the property and

worse our the subjuries to the same and another

u 2 u 2 C H A P.

. I referentian comment to submitted belief belief

ns of

en:

ve

led

it,

to

ha

his

wer

10

ept

re.

-mo

ade

all

ady

fon,

any

en-

npli-

molt

d me

fairs

her

rced

00 00

have

hend

gular

d the,

prefer

nol-

e ac-

l, she

o the

1 de-

that

· and

igion

C H A P. IV.

Discourses on the road, and a description of the palace of Death.

WE were all filent for some minutes, till being well shaken into our several seats, I opened my mouth first, and related what had happened to me after our separation in the city we had just left. The rest of the company, except the grave female spirit, whom our reader may remember to have refused giving an account of the distemper which occasioned her dissolution, did the same. It might be tedious to relate these at large; we shall therefore only mention a very remarkable inveteracy which the Surfeit declared to all the other diseases, especially to the Fever, who she said, by the roguery of the porters, received acknowledgements from numberless passengers, which were due to herself. 'Indeed,' says she, ' those cane ' headed fellows,' for so she called them, alluding, I suppose, to their ticket, ' are constantly making such · mistakes; there's no gratitude in those fellows; for I am fure they have greater obligation to me than to any other difease, except the vapours.' These relations were no fooner over, than one of the company informed us, we were approaching to the most noble building he had ever beheld, and which we learnt from our coachman, was the palace of Death. Its outside, indeed, appeared extremely magnificent. Its structure was of the Gothic order: vast beyond imagination, the whole pile confisting of black marble. Rows of immense yews form an amphitheatre round it of fuch height and thickness, that no ray of the fun ever perforates this grove; where black eternal darkness would reign, was it not excluded by innumerable lamps, which are placed in pyramids round the grove. So that the distant reflection they cast on the palace, which is plentifully gilt with gold on the outside, is inconceivably solemn. To this I may add, the hollow murmur of winds constantly heard from the grove, and the very remote found of roaring waters. Indeed,

Ind the proada we to l it is fold bled nifie

beer only ful with my

the

ten

cou

of v

ces

of cheand and wall peft

The

in o

bore alm read leto

tere fucl hi

tain

he he

fenc

t,

V-"

ed

to

n

e.

ed

ch

e

I

ch.

I

ta

a-

ny

ble

nt

Its

Its

na-

le.

ind

the

nal

nu.

ind

òn

the

dd,

om

ers.

ed,

Indeed, every circumstance seems to conspire to fill the mind with horror and consternation as we approach to this calace; which we had fearce time toadmire, before our vehicle stopped at the gate, and we were defired to alight in order to pay our respects to his most mortal majesty, (this being the title which it feems he assumes.) The outward court was full of foldiers, and, indeed, the whole very much refembled the state of an earthly monarch, only more magnificent. We passed through several courts, into a vast hall, which led to a spacious stair-case, at the bottom of which stood two pages, with very grave countenances; whom I recollected afterwards to have formerly been very eminent undertakers, and were in reality the only difinal faces I saw here: for this palace, so awful and tremendous without, is all gay and iprightly within, so that we soon lost all those dismal and gionmy ideas we had contracted in approaching it. Indeed, the still silence maintained among the guards and attendants resembled rather the stately pomp of eastern. courts; but there was on every face such symptoms of content and happiness, that diffused an air of chearfulness all round. We ascended the stair-case, and passed through many noble apartments, whose walls were adorned with various battle-pieces in tapeftry, and which we spent some time in observing. These brought to my mind those beautiful ones I had in my life-time seen at Blenheim, nor could I prevent my curiofity from enquiring where the Duke of Marlborough's victories were placed; (for I think they were almost the only battles of any eminence I had read of, which I did not meet with:) when the lkeleton of a beef-eater shaking his head, told me, a certain gentleman, one Lewis XIV. who had great interest with his most mortal majesty, had prevented any fuch from being hung up there; 'besides,' says he, his majelty hath no great respect for that Duke, for he never sent him a subject he could keep from him, nor did he ever get a fingle subject by his means, but he lost 1000 others for him. We found the presence chamber, at our entrance, very full, and a buz ran

ran through it, as in all affemblies, before the principal figure enters; for his majesty was not yet come out. At the bottom of the room were two persons in close conference, one with a square black cap on his head, and the other with a robe embroidered with flames of fire. These, I was informed, were a judge long fince dead, and an inquisitor general. I overheard them disputing with great eagerness, whether the one had hanged, or the other burnt the most. While I was listening to this dispute, which seemed to be in no likelihood of a speedy decision, the emperor entered the room, and placed himself between two figures, one of which was remarkable for the roughness, and the other for the beauty of his appearance. These were, it feems, Charles XII. of Sweden, and A. lexander of Macedon. I was at too great a distance to hear any of the conversation, so could only satisfy my curiofity by contemplating the feveral personages present, of whose names I informed myself by a page, who looked as pale and meagre as any court page in the other world, but was fomewhat more modelt. He shewed me here two or three Turkish emperors, to whom his most mortal majesty seemed to express much civility. Here were likewise several of the Roman emperors, among whom none feemed fo much careffed as Caligula, on account, as the page told me, of his pious wish, that he could send all the Romans hither at one blow. The reader may be perhaps surprised that I saw no physicians near me; as indeed I was myfelf, till informed that they were all departed to the City of Diseases, where they were busy in an experiment to purge away the immortality of the foul.

293

96

do

1

f

EHE

n

I

a

sp

re

W

m

pr

th

fpi

It would be tedious to recollect the many individuals I saw here: but I cannot omit a sat figure well drest in the French sashion, who was received with extraordinary complaisance by the emperor, and whom I imagined to be Lewis XIV. himself; but the page acquainted me he was a celebrated French cook.

We were at length introduced to the royal prefence, and had the honour to kis hands. His majesty asked

WORLD TO THE NEXT, &c. 24

asked us a few questions, not very material to relate, and soon after retired.

When we returned into the yard, we found our caravan ready to fet out, at which we all declared ourselves well pleased; for we were sufficiently tired with the formality of a court, notwithstanding its outward splendor and magnificence.

CHAP. V.

The travellers proceed on their journey, and meet several spirits, who are coming into the flesh.

WE now came to the banks of the great river Cocytus, where we quitted our vehicle, and passed the water in a boat, after which we were obliged to travel on foot the rest of our journey; and now we met, for the first time, several passengers travelling to the world we had left, who informed us they were

fouls going into the flesh.

ne

no

ed

es,

nd

ese

A-

nce

isfy

ges

age,

e in

He

, 10

uch

em-

d as

his

ither

rised

my.

City

nt to

duals

dreft

traor.

ima-

ge ac-

l pre-

najelty

alked

The two first we met were walking arm in arm in very close and friendly conference; they informed us, that one of them was intended for a duke, and the other for a hackney coachman. As we had not yet arrived at the place where we were to deposite our passions, we were all surprised at the familiarity which subsisted between persons of such different degrees, nor could the grave lady help expressing her assonithment at it. The suture coachman then replied with a laugh, that they had exchanged lots; for that the duke had with his dukedom drawn a shrew of a wife, and the coachman only a single state.

As we proceeded on our journey, we met a solemn spirit walking alone with great gravity in his countenance: our curiosity invited us, notwithstanding his reserve, to ask what lot he had drawn. He answered, with a smile, he was to have the reputation of a wise man with 100,000/. in his pocket, and that he was practising the solemnity which he was to act in the o-

ther world.

A little farther we met a company of very merry spirits, whom we imagined by their mirth to have drawn

BWAT

drawn some mighty lot; but on enquiry, they informed

us they were to be beggars.

The farther we advanced, the greater numbers we met; and now we discovered two large roads leading different ways, and of very different appearance; the one all craggy with rocks, full as it feemed of boggy grounds, and every where befet with briars, fo that it was impossible to pass through it without the utmost danger and difficulty; the other the most delightful imaginable, leading through the most verdant meadows, painted and perfumed with all kinds of beautiful flowers; in short, the most wanton imagination could imagine nothing more lovely. Notwithstanding which, we were furprised to see great numbers crowding into the former, and only one or two folitary ipirits. chusing the latter. On inquiry we were acquainted that the bad road was the way to Greatness, and the other to Goodness. When we expressed our surprise at the preference given to the former, we were acquainted that it was chosen for the sake of the music of drums and trumpets, and the perpetual acclamations of the mob, with which those who travelled this way, were constantly saluted. We were told likewise, that there were several noble palaces to be seen, and lodged in on this road, by those who had passed through the difficulties of it, (which indeed many were not able to furmount) and great quantities of all forts of treasure to be found in it; whereas the other had little inviting more than the beauty of the way, scarce a handsome building, fave one greatly resembling a certain house by the Bath, to be feen during the whole journey; and laftly, that it was thought very fcandalous and mean-spirited to travel through this, and as highly honourable and noble to pass by the other.

We now heard a violent noise, when casting our eyes forwards, we perceived a vast number of spirits advancing in pursuit of one, whom they mocked and insulted with all kinds of scorn. I cannot give my reader a more adequate idea of this scene, than by comparing it to an English mob conducting a pick-pocket to the water; or by supposing that an incensed audience

audience at a play-house had unhappily possessed themselves of the miserable damned poet. Some laughed, fome hissed, some squawled, some groaned, some bawled, some spit at him, some threw dirt at him. It was impossible not to ask who or what the wretched fpirit was, whom they treated in this barbarous manner; when, to our great surprise, we were informed that it was a king: we were likewise told, that this manner of behaviour was usual among the spirits to those who drew the lots of emperors, kings, and other great men, not from envy or anger, but mere derifion and contempt of earthly grandeur: that nothing was more common, than for those who had drawn these great prizes, as to us they seemed, to exchange them with tailors and coblers; and that Alexander the Great and Diogenes had formerly done so; he that was afterwards Diogenes having originally fallen on the lot of Alexander.

And now on a sudden, the mockery ceased, and the king spirit having obtained a hearing, began to speak as follows: for we were now near enough to hear him distinctly.

GENTLEMEN,

C

15.

y.

at

ed

he

to.

re-

ng

me

use

y;

ind

hly

our

irits.

and

my

by

pick-

nsed

ence

I am justly surprised at your treating me in this manner; fince, whatever lot I have drawn, I did not chuse: if therefore it be worthy of derision, you ' should compassionate me, for it might have fallen to any of your shares. I know in how low a light the station which fate hath assigned me is considered here, and that when ambition doth not sup-' port it, it becomes generally so intolerable, that there is scarce any other condition for which it is not glad-' ly exchanged: for what portion in the world to which we are going, is so miserable as that of care? Should I therefore consider myself as become by this lot effentially your superior, and of a higher order of ' being than the rest of my fellow-creatures: should I foolishly imagine myself without wisdom superior to the wife, without knowledge to the learned, without courage to the brave, and without goodness and virtue to the good and virtuous; furely so preposterous, so absurd a pride would justly render me the object of ridicule. But far be it from me to entertain it. And yet, gentlemen, I prize the lot I have drawn, nor would I exchange it with any of yours, feeing it is in my eye so much greater than the rest. Ambition, which I own myself posfessed of, teaches me this. Ambicion, which makes me covet praise, assures me, that I shall enjoy a much larger proportion of it than can fall within your power either to deserve or obtain. I am then fuperior to you all, when I am able to do more good, and when I execute that power. What the father is to the fon, the guardian to the orphan, or the patron to his client, that am I to you. You are my children, to whom I will be a father, a guardian, and a patron. Not one evening in my long reign (for so it is to be) will I repose myself to rest, without the glorious, the heart-warming consideration, that thousands that night owe their sweetest rest to me. What a delicious fortune is it to him, whose strongest appetite is doing good, to have every day the opportunity and the power of fatisfying it! If fuch a man hath ambition, how happy is it for him to be feated fo on high, that every 'act blazes abroad, and attracts to him praises tainted with neither farcasm nor adulation, but such as the nicest and most delicate mind may relish? Thus therefore, while you derive your good from me, I am your superior. If to my strict distribution of justice you owe the safety of your property from domeltic enemies: if by my vigilance and valour you are protected from foreign foes: if by my encouragement of genuine industry, every science, every art which can embellish or sweeten life is produced and flourishes among you; will any of you be so insen-' fible or ungrateful, as to deny praise and respect to him, by whose care and conduct you enjoy these bleffings? I wonder not at the censure which so frequently falls on those in my station; but I wonder that those in my station so frequently deserve it. · What

. .

the ap

dr:

€pi

7

ing fag the was

wh Th god

defi ferv fpir

whi any the

eart

The

What strange perverseness of nature! what wanton delight in mischief must taint his composition, who prefers dangers, difficulty, and difgrace, by doing evil, to fafety, eafe, and honour, by doing good? who refuses happiness in the other world, and heaven in this, for misery there, and hell here? But be assured, my intentions are different. I shall always endeavour the ease, the happiness, and the glory of my people, being confident that by fo doing, I take the most certain method of procuring them all to myfelf.'-He then struck directly into the road of Goodness, and received such a shout of applause, as I never remember to have heard equalled. He was gone a little way, when a spirit limped

after him swearing he would fetch him back. This spirit, I was presently informed, was one who had

drawn the lot of his prime minister.

CHAP. VI.

the of si mo betch side Lanei

or teheninen ad non like minist in

An account of the wheel of Fortune, with a method of preparing a spirit for this world.

7 E now proceeded on our journey, without stay-VV ing to fee whether he fulfilled his word or no; and, without encountering any thing worth mentioning, came to the place where the spirits on their pasfage to the other world were obliged to decide by lot the station in which every one was to act there. Here was a monstrous wheel, infinitely larger than those in which I had formerly feen lottery tickets deposited. This was called the WHEEL OF FORTUNE. goddess herself was present. She was one of the most deformed females I ever beheld; nor could I help obferving the frowns she expressed when any beautiful spirit of her own sex passed by her, nor the affability which smiled in her countenance on the approach of any handsome male spirits. Hence I accounted for the truth of an observation I had often made on earth, that nothing is more fortunate than handsome men, nor more unfortunate than handsome women. The reader may be perhaps pleased with an account of the the whole method of equipping a spirit for his entrance into the field.

First then, he receives from a very sage person, whose look much resembled that of an apothecary, (his warehouse likewise bearing an affinity to an apothecary's shop) a small phial inscribed, THE PATHE-TIC POTION, to be taken just before you are born. This potion is a mixture of all the passions, but in no exact proportion, fo that sometimes one predominates and sometimes another; nay, often in the hurry of making up, one particular ingredient is, as we were informed left out. The spirit receiveth at the fame time another medicine called the Nousphoric DECOCTION, of which he is to drink ad libitum. This decoction is an extract from the faculties of the mind, fometimes extremely strong and spirituous, and sometimes altogether as weak: for very little care is taken in the preparation. This decoction is so extremely bitter and unpleasant, that notwithstanding its wholesomeness, several spirits will not be persuaded to swallow a drop of it; but throw it'away, or give it to any other who will receive it: by which means fome who were not disgusted by the nauseousness, drank double and treble portions. I observed a beautiful young female, who talting it immediately from curiofity, screwed up her face and cast it from her with great disdain, whence advancing presently to the wheel, she drew a coronet, which she clapped up so eagerly, that I could not distinguish the degree; and indeed, I observed several of the same sex, after a very small sip, throw the bottles away.

As foon as the spirit is dismissed by the operator, or apothecary, he is at liberty to approach the wheel, where he hath a right to extract a single lot: but those whom fortune favours, she premits sometimes fecretly to draw three or four. I observed a comical kind of figure who drew forth a handful, which, when he opened, were a bishop, a general, a privyconnfellor, a player, and a poet laureat, and returning the three first, he walked off finiling with the two last grade and marks of the state of the state of

931

To moote its are being the area of the test of Every

tur

wh

lot

rem

Wit

tak

mn

pre

of I

disc

WORLD TO THE NEXT, &c. 229

Every fingle lot contained two or more articles, which were generally disposed so as to render the lots as equal as possible to each other.

On one was written Earl,

Riches

Health,

Disquietude. On another,

Cobler,

Sickness,

Good-humour.

On a Third, Poet,

后是否的对象的 新加州 病

Contempt,

Self-satisfaction.

On a Fourth,

General;

Honour,

On a Fifth, Cottage,

Discontent.

Happy-love.

On a Sixth, Coach and fix,

Impotent jealous busband.

On a Seventh, Prime-minister,

Disgrace.

On an Eighth, Patriot,

at

ne

at

b-

p,

or,

el,

ut

nes

cal

ch,

vy-

rn-

wo

RY

Glory. On a Ninth, Philosopher,

Poverty,

in Antonia White come of Eafe. The same sound the

On a Tenth, Merchant,

Riches,

Gare. 12 Care. 12

And indeed the whole seemed to contain such a mixture of good and evil, that it would have puzzled me which to chuse. I must not omit here, that in every lot was directed whether the drawer should marry or remain in celibacy, the married lots being all marked with a large pair of horns.

We were obliged, before we quitted this place, to take each of us an emetic from the apothecary, which immediately purged us of all our earthly passions, and presently the cloud forfook our eyes, as it doth those of Æneas in Virgil when removed by Venus, and we discerned things in a much clearer light than before.

We

We began to compassionate those spirits who were making their entry into the flesh, whom we had till then secretly envied, and to long eagerly for those delightful plains which now opened themselves to our eyes, and to which we now hastened with the utmost eagerness. On our way, we met with several spirits. with very dejected countenances; but our expedition would not fuffer us to ask any questions.

At length we arrived at the gate of Elysium. Here was a prodigious croud of spirits waiting for admittance, some of whom were admitted, and some were rejected: for all were strictly examined by the porter, whom I foon discovered to be the celebrated Judge

Minos.

C H A P. VII.

The proceedings of Judge Minos, at the gate of Elysium.

I NOW got near enough to the gate, to hear the several claims of those who endeavoured to pass. The first, among other pretentions, set forth, that he had been very liberal to an hospital; but Minos anfwered, Ostentation, and repulsed him. The second exhibited, that he had constantly frequented his church, been a rigid observer of fast-days. He likewise represented the great animosity he had shewn to vice in others, which never escaped his severest censure; and, as to his own behaviour, he had never been once guilty of whoring, drinking, gluttony, or any other excess. He faid, he had disinherited his son for getting a bastard --- Have you so? faid Minos, then pray return into the other world and beget another; for such an unnatural rascal shall never pass this gate. A dozen others, who had advanced with very confident countenances, seeing him rejected, turned about of their own accord, declaring, if he could not pals, they had no expectation, and accordingly they followed him back to earth; which was the fate of all who were repulsed, they being obliged to take a farther purification, unless those who were guilty of some very heinous crimes, who were huftled in at a little back

fe

b

b

fc

h

re

th

liv

th

OI

fr

m

an

he

th

he

fet

to

m

fer

bo

ati

back gate, whence they immediately tumbled into the bottomless pit.

The next spirit that came up, declared, he had done neither good nor evil in the world: for that fince his arrival at man's estate, he had spent his whole time infearch of curiofities; and particularly in the study of butterflies, of which he had colleded an immense number. Minos made him no answer, but with great

forn pulhed him back.

n

n

r;

e.

fi-

ut

ſs,

1-

all

r-

ne

tle

ck

There now advanced a very beautiful spirit indeed. She began to ogle Minos the moment she saw him. She faid, the hoped there was some merit in refusing a great number of lovers, and dying a maid, though the had had the choice of a hundred. Minos told her the had not refused enough yet, and turned her back.

She was succeeded by a spirit, who told the judge, he believed his works would speak for him. What works? answered Minos. My dramatic works, replied the other, which have done so much good in recommending virtue and punishing vice.- Very well, faid the judge, if you please to stand by, the first perfon who passes the gate by your means, shall carry you in with him: but, if you will take my advice, I think, for expedition sake, you had better return and live another life upon earth. The bard grumbled at this, and replied, that befides his poetical works, he had done some other good things: for that he had once lent the whole profits of a benefit night to a friend, and by that means had faved him and his family from destruction. Upon this, the gate flew open, and Minos defired him to walk in, telling him, if he had mentioned this at first, he might have spared the remembrance of his plays. The poet answered, he believed, if Minos had read his works, he would fet a higher value on them. He was then beginning to repeat, but Minos puthed him forward, and turning his back to him, applied himself to the next pasfenger, a very genteel ipirit, who made a very low bow to Minos, and then threw himself into an erect attitude, and imitated the motion of taking fnuff with X 2

" The second of the second of

his right hand.—Minos asked him, what he had to fay for himself? He answered, he would dance a minuet with any spirit in Elysium: that he could likewise perform all his other exercises very well, and hoped he had in his life deserved the character of a perfect sine gentleman. Minos replied, it would be great pity to rob the world of so sine a gentleman, and therefore desired him to take the other trip. The beau bowed, thanked the judge, and said he desired no better. Several spirits expressed much assonishment at this his satisfaction; but we were afterwards informed, he had not taken the emetic above-mentioned.

A miserable old spirit now crawled forwards, whose face I thought I had formerly feen near Westminster-Abbey. He entertained Minos with a long harangue of what he had done when in the House; and then proceeded to inform him how much he was worth, without attempting to produce a fingle instance of any one good action. Minos stopt the career of his difcourse, and acquainted him, he must take a trip back again. - What, to S -- house? faid the fpirit in an ecstafy. But the judge, without making him any anfwer, turned to another, who with a very folemn air and great dignity, acquainted him, he was a duke .--To the right about, Mr duke, cried Minos, you are infinitelý too great a man for Elysium; and then giving him a kick on the b-ch, he addressed himself to a spirit, who with fear and trembling begged he might not go to the bottomless pit: he said, he hoped Minos would confider, that though he had gone aftray, he had fuffered for it; that it was necessity which drove him to the robbery of eighteen pence, which he had committed, and for which he was hanged: that he had done some good actions in his life, that he had supported an aged parent with his labour, that he had been a very tender husband and a kind father, and that he had ruined himself by being bail for his friend. At which words the gate opened, and Minos bid him enter, giving him a flap on the back as he pass'd by him.

A great

b

in

tr

fa

h

ec

ai

lo

al

b

lo

no

ha

ca

yo

m

M

an

be

th

Pr

tru

fac

Y

M

Wa

oth

Pa

fer

No

tho

A great number of spirits now came forwards, who all declared they had the same claim, and that the captain should speak for them. He acquainted the judge, that they had been all flain in the fervice of their country. Minos was going to admit them, but had the curiofity to ask who had been the invader. in order, as he faid, to prepare the back gate for him. The captain answered, they had been the invaders. themselves, that they had entered the enemies country, and burnt and plundered feveral cities .- And for what reason? said Minos.—By the command of him who paid us, faid the captain, that is the reason of a foldier. We are to execute whatever we are commanded, or we should be a difgrace to the army, and very little deserve our pay. You are brave fellows, indeed, said Minos, but be pleased to face about, and obey my command for once, in returning back to the other world: for what should such fellows as you do, where there are no cities to be burnt, nor people to be destroyed? But let me advise you to have a stricter regard to truth for the future, and not call the depopulating other countries the fervice of your own. The captain answered, in a rage, D-n me, do you give me the lye? and was going to take Minos by the nofe, had not his guards prevented him, and immediately turned him and all his followers back. the fame road they came.

n

re

V-

to

ht

os

ve

ad

he

ad

ad

nd

nd.

im

by

eat

Four spirits informed the jndge, that they had been starved to death through poverty; being the father, mother, and two children. That they had been honest, and as industrious as possible, till sickness had preyented the man from labour.—All that is very true, cried a grave spirit, who stood by: I know the fact; for these poor people were under my cure, ---You was, I suppose, the parson of the parith, cries. Minos; I hope you had a good living, Sir. That was but a small one, replied the spirit: but I had another a little better .- Very well, said Minos, let the poor people pass .- At which the parson was stepping forwards with a stately gait before them; but Minos caught hold of him, and pulled him back, faying, Not io fast, doctor; you must take one step more into

X 3

the other world first; for no man enters that gate with-

out charity.

A very stately figure now presented himself, and informing Minos he was a patriot, began a very florid harangue on public virtue, and the liberties of his country. Upon which, Minos shewed him the utmost respect, and ordered the gate to be opened. The patriot was not contented with this applause-he said, he had behaved as well in place as he had in the opposition; and that though he was now obliged to embrace the court-measures, yet he had behaved very honestly to his friends, and brought as many in as was possible.-Hold a moment, says Minos, on second consideration, Mr Patriot, I think a man of your great virtue and abilities will be fo much miss'd by your country, that if I might advise you, you should take a journey back again. I am fure you will not decline it, for I am certain you will with great readiness sacrifice your own happiness to the public good. The patriot smiled, and told Minos, he believed he was in jest; and was offering to enter the gate, but the judge laid fast hold of him, and insisted on his return, which the patriot still declining, he at last ordered his guards to seize him, and conduct him back.

b

c

if

b

h

Ce

m

a

di

an

fo

m

fee

fla

ha

to

de

A spirit now advanced, and the gate was immediately thrown open to him, before he had spoken a word. I heard some whisper,—That is our last Lord

Mayor.

It now came to our company's turn. The fair spirit, which I mentioned with so much applause, in the beginning of my journey, pass'd through very easily; but the grave lady was rejected on her first appearance, Minos declaring, there was not a fingle

prude in Elyfium.

The judge then address'd himself to me, who little expected to pass this fiery trial. I confess'd I had indulged myself very freely with wine and women in my youth, but had never done an injury to any man living, nor avoided an opportunity of doing good; that I pretended to very little virtue more than general philanthropy, and private friendship.—I was proceeding,

ceeding, when Minos bid me enter the gate, and not indulge myself with trumpeting forth my virtues. I accordingly passed for ward with my lovely companion, and embracing her with vast eagerness, but spiritual innocence, the returned my embrace in the same manner, and we both congratulated ourselves on our arrival in this happy region, whose beauty no painting of the imagination can describe.

C H A P. VIII.

0

15

d

r

y

ld

ot

8.

lic

e-

he

ed

at

im

ne-

na

ord

fair

in

ery

ap-

ngle

ittle

in-

1 in

nan

od;

ene-

oro-

ing,

The adventures which the author met on his first entrance into Elyfium.

T7 E pursued our way through a delicious grove of orange-trees, where I daw infinite numbers of spirits, every one of whom I knew, and was known by them: (for spirits here know one another by intuition.) I presently met a little daughter, whom I had lost several years before. Good gods! what words can describe the raptures, the melting passionate tendernefs, with which we kiffed each other, continuing in our embrace, with the most extatic joy, a space, which if time had been measured here as on earth, could not be less than half a year.

The first spirit with whom I entered into discourse, was the famous Leonidas of Sparta. I acquainted him with the honours which had been done him by a celebrated poet of our nation; to which he answered, he was very much obliged to him.

We were prefently afterwards entertained with the most delicious voice I had ever heard, accompanied by a violin, equal to Signior Piantanida. I presently discovered the musician and songster to be Orpheus and Sappho.

Old Homer was present at this concert, (if I may fo call it) and Madam Dacier fat in his lap. He asked much after Mr Pope, and said he was very desirous of feeing him; for that he had read his Iliad in his tranflation with almost as much delight as he believed he had given others in the original. I had the curiofity to enquire whether he had really writ that poem in detached pieces, and fung it about as ballads all over Greece

Greece, according to the report which went of him? He smiled at my question, and asked me whether there appeared any connection in the poem: for if there did, he thought I might answer myself. I then importuned him to acquaint me in which of the cities which contended for the honour of his birth, he was really born? To which he answered—Upon my soul, I can't tell.

Virgil then came up to me, with Mr Addison under his arm. 'Well, Sir,' faid he, 'how many translations have these few last years produced of my Æneid? I told him, I believed several, but I could not possibly remember; for that I had never read any but Doctor Trupp's. -- ' Ay,' faid he, ' that is a curious piece ' indeed!' I then acquainted him with the discovery made by Mr Warburton of the Eleusinian mysteries couched in his fixth book. 'What mysteries?' faid MrAddison. 'The Eleusinian,' answered Virgil, 'which 'I have disclosed in my sixth book.' 'How!' replied Addison. 'You never mentioned a word of any such " mysteries to me in all our acquaintance.' 'I thought ' it was unnecessary,' cried the other, ' to a man of your infinite learning: besides, you always told me, you perfectly understood my meaning.' Upon this I thought the critic looked a little out of countenance, and turned afide to a very merry spirit, one Dick Steele, who embraced him, and told him, he had been the greatest man upon earth; that he readily refigned up all the merit of his own works to him. Upon which, Addison gave him a gracious smile, and clapping him on the back with much folemnity, cried out, Well faid, Dick.'

I then observed Shakespeare standing between Betterton and Booth, and deciding a disserence between those two great actors, concerning the placing an accent in one of his lines: this was disputed on both sides with a warmth which surprized me in Elysium, till I discovered by intuition, that every soul retained its principal characteristic, being, indeed, its very estence. The line was that celebrated one in Othello:

Put out the light, and then put out the light, according to Betterton. Mr Booth contended to have it thus:

fi

Ol

m

B

yo

ag

of

.]

· 1

big

fat

Wr

ner

WO

· t

u

· jı

nur

anc

· fe

Put out the light, and then put out THEE light. I could not help offering my conjecture on this occafion, and suggested it might perhaps be,

Put out the light, and then put out THY light.

Another hinted a reading very sophisticated in my

opinion,

74

Put out the light, and then put out THEE, light; making light to be the vocative case. Another would

have altered the last word, and read,

But Betterton said, if the text was to be disturbed, he saw no reason why a word might not be changed as well as a letter, and instead of 'put out thy light,' you might read 'put out thy eyes.' At last it was agreed on all sides to refer the matter to the decision of Shakespeare himself, who delivered his sentiments as follows: 'Faith, gentlemen, it is so long since I 'wrote the line, I have forgot my meaning. This I 'know, could I have dreamt so much nonsense would 'have been talked, and writ about it, I would have 'blotted it out of my works: for I am sure, if any 'of these be my meaning, it doth me very little ho-nour.'

He was then interrogated concerning some other ambiguous passages in his works; but he declined any satisfactory answer; saying, if Mr Theobald had not writ about it sufficiently, there were three or sour more new editions of his plays coming out, which he hoped would satisfy every one: Concluding, I marvel nothing so much as that men will gird themselves at discovering obscure beauties in an author. Certes the greatest and most pregnant beauties are ever the plainest and most evidently striking; and when two meanings of a passage can in the least balance our judgments which to prefer, I hold it matter of unquestionable certainty, that neither of them is worth a farthing.

From his works our conversation turned on his monument; upon which Shakespeare, shaking his sides, and addressing himself to Milton, cried out; On my word, brother Milton, they have brought a nobbe set of poets together; they would have been hanged erst

- erst have convened such a company at their tables,
- 'when alive.' 'True, brother,' answered Milton,
- unless we had been as incapable of eating then as we

are now.

C H A P. IX.

More adventures in Elyfium.

- CROUD of spirits now joined us, whom I In foon perceived to be the heroes, who here frequently pay their respects to the several bards, the recorders of their actions. I now faw Achilles and Ulysses addressing themselves to Homer, and Æneas and Julius Cæsar to Virgil: Adam went up to Milton, upon which I whispered Mr Dryden, that I thought the devil should have paid his compliments there, according to his opinion. Dryden only answered, I believe the devil was in me when I faid fo. Several applied themselves to Shakespeare, amongst whom Henry V. made a very diftinguishing appearance, While my eyes were fixed on that monarch, a very small spirit came up to me, shook me heartily by the hand, and told me his name was Thomas Thumb. I expressed great fatisfaction in seeing him, nor could I help speaking my resentment against the historian, who had done such injustice to the stature of this great little man: which he represented to be no bigger than a span; whereas I plainly perceived at first fight, he was full a foot and a half, (and the 37th part of an inch more, as he himself informed me) being indeed little shorter than some considerable beaus of the prefent age.

I asked this little hero concerning the truth of those flories related of him, viz. of the pudding and the cow's belly. As to the former, he faid it was a ridiculous legend, worthy to be laughed at; but as to the latter, he could not help owning there was some truth in it: nor had he any reason to be ashamed of it, as he was swallowed by surprize; adding with great siercenes, that if he had had any weapon in his hand, the cow

thould have as foon fwallowed the devil.

He

h fin in ne W

fe

gi he co gi: wi

lac

ho fho for Ma we

ten no fell if t to .

fou

up

tha

les con

ofte At him mot

his

At ed t ferv the

vate

He spoke the last word with so much sury, and seemed so consounded, that perceiving the effect it had on him, I immediately waved the story, and passing to other matters, we had much conversation touching giants. He said, so far from killing any, he had never seen one alive; that he believed those actions were by miltake recorded of him, instead of Jack the giant killer, whom he knew very well, and who had, he sancied, extirpated the race. I assured him to the contrary, and told him I had myself seen a huge tame giant, who very complaisantly staid in London a whole winter, at the special request of several gentlemen and ladies; though the affairs of his family called him home to Sweden.

e-

e-

be

as

n,

ht

IC-

ral

om

ce.

ery.

the

MB.

uld.

iam,

reat

han

he:

an

deed

pre-

hole

ow's

lous

tter,

n it:

was

nels,

COW

He

I now beheld a stern-looking spirit leaning on the shoulder of another spirit, and presently discerned the sormer to be Oliver Cromwell, and the latter Charles Martel. I own I was a little surprized at seeing Cromwell here; for I had been taught by my grandmother, that he was carried away by the devil himself in a tempest: but he assured me on his honour, there was not the least truth in that story. However, he confessed he had narrowly escaped the bottomless pit; and if the former part of his conduct had not been more to his honour than the latter, he had been certainly soused into it. He was nevertheless sent back to the upper world with this lot,

Army,
Gavalier,
Diftress.

He was born for the second time, the day of Charles II.'s restoration, into a family which had lost a very considerable fortune in the service of that prince and his father, for which they received the reward very often conferred by princes on real merit, viz.—000. At sixteen his father bought a small commission for him in the army, in which he served without any promotion all the reigns of Charles II. and of his brother. At the revolution he quitted his regiment, and followed the fortunes of his former master, and was in his service dangerously wounded at the samous battle of the Boyne, where he fought in the capacity of a pri-

9357

wate soldier. He recovered of this wound, and retired after the unfortunate king to Paris, where he was reduced to support a wife and seven children, (for his lot had horns in it) by cleaning shoes and snussing candles at the opera; in which situation after he had spent a sew miserable years, he died half starved and broken-hearted. He then revisited Minos, who compassionating his sufferings, by means of that samily to whom he had been in his former capacity so bitter an enemy, suffered him to enter here.

My curiosity could not refrain asking him one question, i. e. Whether in reality he had any desire to obtain the crown? He smiled, and said, 'No more than an ecclesiastic hath to the mitre, when he cries, Nolo Episcopari. Indeed, he seemed to express some contempt at the question, and presently turned away.

A venerable spirit appeared next, whom I found to be the great historian Livy. Alexander the Great, who was just arrived from the palace of Death, passed by him with a frown. The historian observing it, said, Ay, you may frown; but those troops which conquered the base Asiatic slaves, would have made no figure against the Romans.' We then privately lamented the loss of the most valuable part of his history, after which he took occasion to commend the judicious collection made by Mr Hooke, which he faid was infinitely preferable to all others; and at my mentioning Echard's, he gave a bounce, not unlike the going off of a squib, and was departing from me, when I begged him to fatisfy my curiofity in one point, whether he was really superstitious or, no? for I had always believed he was, till Mr Leibnitz had affored me to the contrary. He answered fullenly,- Doth Mr Leib-'nitz know my mind better than myself?' and then walked away.

I was grand a wood days begin to have the south of the said of

report of the last water beautiful the tracker of Francisco to the con-

all isopation aline conduction to be found to be a serveral to be which

a string whence the tent of the tent of the string of

T

b

fe

m

a

m

in

hi

di

re

as

Wa

th

to

litt

tra

ba

fol

4 0

6 e

C H A P. X.

The author is surprized at meeting Julian the Apostate in Elysium: but is satisfied by him, by what means be procured his entrance there. Julian relates his adventures in the character of a slave.

S he was departing, I heard him falute a spirit by the name of Mr Julian the apostate. This exceedingly amazed me: for I had concluded, that no man ever had a better title to the bottomless pit than he. But I soon found, that this same Julian the apostate was also the very individual archbishop Latimer. He told me that several lies had been raised on him in his former capacity, nor was he so bad à man as he had been represented. However, he had been denied admittance, and forced to undergo several subsequent pilgrimages on earth, and to act in the different characters of a slave, a Jew, a general, an heir, a carpenter, a beau, a monk, a fiddler, a wife man, a king, a fool, a beggar, a prince, a statesman, a soldier, a tailor, an alderman, a poet, a knight, a dancing-master, and three times a bishop before his martyrdom, which, together with his other behaviour in this last character, satisfied the judge, and procured him a passage to the blessed regions.

I told him, such various characters must have produced incidents extremely entertaining; and if he remembered all, as I supposed he did, and had leisure, I should be obliged to him for the recital. He answered, he perfectly recollected every circumstance; and as to leisure, the only business of that happy place was to contribute to the happiness of each other. He therefore thanked me for adding to his, in proposing to him a method of increasing mine. I then took my little darling in one hand, and my favourite sellow-traveller in the other, and going with him to a sunny bank of slowers, we all sat down, and he began as

follows:

n

to

ed

d,

n-

no

a.

ry,

ous

in-

ng

off

ged

he

be-

the

eib-

hen

P,

'I suppose, you are sufficiently acquainted with my story, during the time I acted the part of the emperor Julian, though I assure you, all which hath

been related of me is not true, particularly with re-

e gard to the many prodigies forerunning my death.

· However, they are now very little worth disputing;

and if they can serve any purpose of the historian,

' they are extremely at his fervice.

My next entrance into the world, was at Laodicea in Syria, in a Roman family of no great note;

s and being of a roving disposition, I came at the

e age of seventeen to Constantinople, where, after

about a year's stay, I set out for Thrace at the

time when the emperor Valens admitted the Goths

into that country. I was there so captivated with

the beauty of a Gothic lady, the wife of one Ro-

doric a captain, whose name, out of the most delicate tenderness for her lovely sex, I shall even at

this distance conceal; since her behaviour to me

was more confiftent with good-nature, than with

that virtue which women are obliged to preserve

against every assailant. In order to procure an

' intimacy with this woman, I fold myself a slave to

her husband, who being of a nation not over-in-

clined to jealousy, presented me to his wife, for

those very reasons, which would have induced one

of a jealous complexion to have with-held me from

her, namely, for that I was young and handsome.

· Matters succeeded so far according to my wish,

and the sequel answered those hopes which this beigning had raised. I soon perceived my service

was very acceptable to her : I often met her eyes,

o nor did the withdraw them without a confusion which

is scarce consistent with entire purity of heart. In-

deed, the gave me every day frell encouragement,

but the unhappy distance which circumstances had

placed between us, deterred me long from making

any direct attack; and she was too strict an observer

of decorum, to violate the severe rules of modelly

by advancing first: but passion, at last, got the bet-

ter of my respect, and I resolved to make one bold

sattempt, whatever was the confequence. Accordingly, laying hold of the first kind opportunity,

when the was alone, and my master abroad, I stout-

ly affailed the citadel, and carried it by florm.

and,

· Well

3

t

r

1

and,

Well may I say by storm; for the resistance I met was extremely resolute, and indeed, as much as the most perfect decency would require. She swore often she would cry out for help; but I answered, it was in vain, seeing there was no person near to assist her; and probably she believed me, for she did not once actually cry out; which if she had, I might

very likely have been prevented.

n

0

1-

or

ne

m

h,

e-

ice

es,

ch n-

nt,

ad

ng

er

Ay

et-

old

d-

y,

ıt-

m.

ell

When the found her virtue thus subdued against her will, the patiently submitted to her fate, and quietly suffered me a long time to enjoy the most delicious fruits of my victory; but envious fortune resolved to make me pay a dear price for my pleafure. One day, in the midit of our happiness, we were suddenly turprited by the unexpected return of her hulband, who coming directly into his wife's apartment, just allowed me time to creep under the bed. The disorder in which he found his wife, might have furprifed a jealous temper; but his was to far otherwise, that possibly no milchief would have happened, had he not by a cross accident discovered my legs, which were not well hid. He immediately drew me out by them, and then turning to his wife with a stern countenance, began to handle a weapon he wore by his side, with which I am persuaded he would have instantly dispatched her, had I not very gallantly, and with many imprecations, afforted her innocence and my own guilt; which, however, I protested had hitherto gone no farther than delign. She so well feconded my plea (for the was a woman of wonderful art,) that he was at length imposed upon; and now all his rage was directed against me, threatning all manner of tortures, which the poor lady was in too great a fright and confusion to diffuade him from executing; and perhaps, if her concern for me had made her attempt it, it would have raised a jealousy in him not afterwards to be removed. After some hesitation, Rodoric cried out, he had 'luckily hit on the most proper punishment for me ' in the world, by a method which would at once

do severe justice on me for my criminal intention,

and, at the same time, prevent me from any danger of executing my wicked purpose hereafter. This cruel resolution was immediately executed, and I was no

longer worthy the name of a man.

Having thus disqualified me from doing him any future injury, he still retained me in his family: but the lady, very probably repenting of what the had done, and looking on me as the author of her guilt, would never, for the future, give me either a kind word or look: and shortly after, a great exchange being made between the Romans and the Goths of dogs for men, my lady exchanged me with a Roman widow for a small lapdog, giving a consi-

· derable lum of money to boot.

In this widow's service I remained seven years, during all which time I was very barbarously treated. I was worked without the least mercy, and often severely beat by a swinging maid-servant, who never called me by any other names than those of the Thing and the Animal. Though I used my utmost industry to please, it never was in my power. Neither the lady nor her woman would eat any thing I touched, saying, they did not believe me wholsome. It is unnecessary to repeat particulars; in a word, you can imagine no kind of ill usage which I did not suffer in this family.

At last, an heathen priest, an acquaintance of my lady's, obtained me of her for a present. The scene was now totally changed, and I had as much reason to be satisfied with my present situation, as I had to lament my former. I was so absolutely my master's savourite, that the rest of the slaves paid me almost as much regard as they shewed to him, well knowing, that it was entirely in my power to command, and treat them as I pleased. I was entrusted with all my master's secrets, and

· night the facrifices from the altars, which the people believed the deities themselves devoured. Upon

these we seasted very elegantly, nor could invention suggest a rarity which we did not pamper ourselves

with. Perhaps you may admire at the close union between

T

WORLD TO THE NEXT, &c. 248

between this priest and his slave: but we lived in

an intimacy which the Christians thought criminal ?

but my matter, who knew the will of the gods, with

whom he told me he often conversed, affured me

it was perfectly innocent.

'This happy life continued about four years, when my maiter's death, occasioned by a furfeit got by overfeeding on leveral exquisite dainties, put an end to it. it to appear of a fortanger blumounts

t,

le

b:

17

ld

SV

u.

ge

of

ne

ich

as

ely

ves

to

my

ed.

nd

by.

-09

on

on

ves

on

us

' I now fell into the hands of one of a very different disposition, and this was no other than the celebrated St Chryfoltome, who dieted me with fermons instead of facrifices, and filled my ears with good things, but not my belly. Instead of high food to fatten and pamper my flesh, I had receipts to mortify and reduce it. With these I edified so well, that within a few months I became a tkeleton. However, as he had converted me to his faith, I was well enough fatisfied with this new manner of living, by which he taught me, I might infure myfelt an eternal reward in a future state. The faint was a good-natured man, and never gave me an fill word but once, which was occasioned by my neglecting to place Aristophanes, which was his constant bed-fellow, on his pillow. He was, indeed, extremely fond of that Greek poet, and frequently made me read his comedies to him: when I came to any of the loose passages, he would smile, and fay, It was pity his matter was not as pure as his " ftyle; of which latter, he was so immoderately fond, that notwithstanding the detestation he expressed for obscenity, he hath made me repeat those passages ten times over. The character of this good man hath been very unjuftly attacked by his heathen cotemporaries, particularly with regard to women; but his severe investives against that fex, are his fufficient justification and the of him of

From the service of this saint, from whom I reeeived manumittion, I entered into the family of 'Timasius, a leader of great eminence in the imperial army, into whose favour I so far infinuated myfelf, that he preferred me to a good command, and

A JOURNEY FROM THIS

and foon made me partake of both his company and his fecrets. I foon grew intoxicated with this preferment, and the more he loaded me with benefits, the more he raised my opinion of my own merit; which still outstripping the rewards he conferred on me, inspired me rather with distatisfaction than gratitude. And thus by preferring me beyond my merit or first expectation, he made me an envious aspiring enemy, whom perhaps, a more moderate bounty would have preserved a dutiful

fervant, main bei dond und thead eith an anavi I fell now acquainted with one Lucilius, a creature of the prime-minister Eutropius, who had by his favour been raised to the post of a tribune; a man of low morals, and eminent only in that meanest of qualities, cunning. This gentleman imagining me a fit tool for the minister's purpose, having often founded my principles of honour and honelty, both which he declared to me were words without meaning; and finding my ready concurrence in his sentiments, recommended me to Eutropius, as very proper to execute some wicked purpoles he had contrived against my friend Timasius. The minister embraced this recommendation, and I was accordingly acquainted by Lucilius (after fome previous accounts of the great esteem Eutropius entertained of me, from the testimony he had borne of my parts), that he would introduce me to him; adding, that he was a great encourager of merit, and that I might depend upon his favour annual pulneve that bothly by many

"

"

16

66

"

(D

. 0

a

· 1

. I was with little difficulty prevailed on to accept of this invitation. A late hour therefore the next evening being appointed, I attended my friend Lucilius to the minister's house. He received me with the utmost civility and chearfulness, and affeeled so much regard to me, that I, who knew onothing of these high scenes of life, concluded I ' had in him the most difinterested friend, owing to the favourable report which Lucilius had made of me. I was however foon cured of this opinion: for immediately after supper, our discourse turned no ducies: and on my dropping four him of med

on the injustice which the generality of the world were guilty of in their conduct to great men, expecting that they should reward their private ment, without ever endeavouring to apply it to their use. "What avail,' faid Eutropius, the learning, wit, " courage, or any virtue which a man may be possessed " of to me, unless I receive some benefit from them? " Hath he not more merit to me, who doth my busi-" ness, and obeys my commands, without any of these " qualities?' I gave fuch entire fatisfaction in my anfwers on this head, that both the minister and his creature grew bolder, and, after some preface began to accuse Timasius. At last, finding I did not attempt to defend him, Lucilius swore a great oath, that he was not fit to live, and that he would dethroy him. Eutropius answered, that it would be too dangerous a talk : ' Indeed,' fays he, ' his crimes " are of io black a dye, and so well known to the Em-" peror, that his death must be a very acceptable ser-" vice, and could not fail meeting a proper reward; " but I question whether you are capable of executing " it.' ' If he is not,' cried I, ' I am; and furely, no " man can have greater motives to destroy him than " myself: for, besides his disloyalty to my prince, for " whom I have so perfect a duty, I have private difobligations to him. I have had fellows put over my head, to the great scandal of the service in general, and to my own prejudice and disappoint-" ment in particular.' __ I will not repeat you my whole speech: but, to be as concile as possible, when we parted that evening, the minister squeezed me heartily by the hand, and with great commendation of my honesty, and assurances of his favour, he appointed me the next evening to come to him alone; when finding me, after a little more fcrutiny, ready for his purpose, he proposed to me, to accuse Timasius of high treason: promising me the highest rewards, if I would undertake it. The consequence to him, I suppose you know, was ruin: but what was it to me? Why truly, when I waited on Eutropius, for the fulfilling his promiles, he received me with great distance and coldness; and on my dropping some hints of my

expec-

3.

1-

at

1.

n.

at

pt

iefw I of expectations from him, he affected not to understand me; saying, he thought impunity was the utmost I could hope for, on discovering my accomplice, whose offence was only greater than mine, as he was in a higher station; and telling me, he had great difficulty to obtain a pardon for me from the Emperor, which, he said, he had struggled very

hardly for, as he had worked the discovery out of me, he turned away, and addressed himself to

another person.

I was so incensed at this treatment, that I refolved revenge, and should certainly have pursued
it, had he not cautiously prevented me, by taking
effectual means to dispatch me soon after out of the
world

You will, I believe, now think I had a fecond good chance for the bottomless pit, and indeed Minos seemed inclined to tumble me in, till he was informed of the revenge taken on me by Rodoric, and my seven years subsequent servitude to the widow; which he thought sufficient to make atonement for all the crimes a single life could admit of, and so sent me back to try my fortune a third time.

C H A P. XI.

In which Julian relates his adventures in the character of an avaricious Jew.

6 D

· i

. 6

. .

• 1

. 0

g

·a

· D

The next character in which I was destined to appear in the slesh, was that of an avaricious Jew. I was born in Alexandria in Egypt. My name was Balthazar. Nothing very remarkable happened to me, till the year of the memorable tumult, in which the Jews of that city are reported in history to have massacred more Christians than at that time dwelt in it. Indeed, the truth is, they did maul the dogs pretty handsomely; but I myself was not present, for as all our people were ordered to be armed, I took that opportunity of selling two swords, which probably I might otherwise never have disposed of, they being extremely old and rushy:

rufty: fo that having no weapon left, I did not care to venture abroad. Besides, though I really thought it an act meriting salvation to murder the Nazarenes, as the fact was to be committed at midnight, at which time, to avoid fuspicion, we were all to fally from our own houses; I could not persuade myfelf to confume to much oil in fitting up till that hour; for their reasons, therefore, I remained at home

that evening.

d

e

d

e

y

of

0

e-

d

ne

bi

i-

n-

ic,

71-

6-

of,

rd

er

ed

pt.

ble

ble

ted

at

ney

elf

red

W.O

ver

nd

ty:

' I was at this time greatly enamoured with one Hypatia, the daughter of a philosopher; a young · lady of the greatest beauty and merit : indeed, she had every imaginable ornament both of mind and body. She teemed not to dillike my person; but there were two obstructions to our marriage, viz. my religion and her poverty; both which might probably have been got over, had not those dogs the Christians murdered her; and what is worte, 'afterwards burnt her body: worse, I say, because I loft by that means a jewel of some value, which I had prefented to her, defigning, if our nuptials did not take place, to demand it of her back again.

Being thus disappointed in my love, Loon after left Alexandria, and went to the imperial city, where I apprehended I should find a good market for jewels on the approaching marriage of the Emperor with Athenais. I disguised myself as a beggar on this journey, for these reasons: first, as I imagined 'I should thus carry my jewels with greater fafety; and fecondly, to lessen my expences; which latter expedient succeeded so well, that I begged two obolion my way more than my travelling cost me, my diet be-

ing chiefly roots, and my drink water.

But, perhaps, it had been better for me if I had been more lavish, and more expeditious: for the ceremony was over before I reached Constantinople; fo that I loft that glorious opportunity of disposing of my jewels, with which many of our people were greatly enriched.

'The life of a mifer is very little worth relating, as it is one constant scheme of getting or saving money. I shall therefore repeat to you some few only

only of my adventures, without regard to any or-

· for

· dil

'ha

. 11

dr

· pri

· po

· ma

ru!

·T

· tw

' in

· to

· th

ot ot

· W

· g

4 in

· te

· II

· W

· W

· a

A Roman Jew, who was a great lover of Falerinian wine, and who indulged himself very freely
with it, came to dine at my house; when knowing he should meet with little wine, and that of the
cheaper fort, sent me in half, a dozen jars of Falerinian. Can you believe I would not give this man
his own wine? Sir, I adulterated it so, that I made
fix jars of them; three, which he and his friend
drank; the other three I afterwards sold to the very
person who originally sent them me, knowing he
would give a better price than any other.

A noble Roman came one day to my house in the country, which I had purchased, for half the value, of a distressed person. My neighbours paid him the compliment of some music, on which account when he departed he left a piece of gold with me, to be distributed among them. I pocketed this money, and ordered them a small vessel of sour wine, which I could not have sold for above two drachmas, and afterwards made them pay in work three times

the value of it.

' As I was not entirely void of religion, tho' I pretended to infinitely more than I had, so I endeavoured to reconcile my transactions to my conscience as well as possible. Thus I never invited any one to eat with me, but those on whose pockets I had fome defign. After our collation, it was constantly my method to fet down in a book I kept for that purpose, what I thought they owed me for their meal. Indeed this was generally a hundred times as much as they could have dined elfewhere for: but however, it was quid pro quo, if not ad valorem. Now, whenever the opportunity offered of imposing on them, I confidered it only as paying myself what they owed me: indeed I did not always confine myfelf frielly to what I had fet down, however extravagant that was; but I reconciled taking the overplus to myfelf as ufance.

But I was not only too cunning for others, I

fometimes over reached myself. I have contracted distempers for want of food and warmth, which hath put me to the expence of a physician: nay, · I lonce very narrowly escaped death by taking bid drugs, only to fave one feven eighths per cent. in the

price.

y

n.

d

By these, and such like means, in the midst of poverty, and every kind of diffres, I saw myself mafter of an immense fortune: the casting up and ruminating on which was my daily and only pleafure. 'This was, however, obstructed and embittered by ' two considerations, which, against my will, often ' invaded my thoughts. One would have been in-' tolerable (but that indeed seldom troubled me) was, that I must one day leave my darling treasure. The other haunted me continually, viz. that my riches were no greater. However, I comforted myfelf a-' gainst this reflection, by an assurance that they would increase daily: on which head, my hopes were so ex-' tensive, that I may say with Virgil,

His ego nec metus rerum nec tempora pono.

Indeed I am convinced, that had I possessed the whole globe of earth, fave one fingle drachma, which I had been certain never to be master of, I am convinced, I say, that single drachma would have given me more uneafiness than all the rest could af-

ford me pleasure.

mai liveribile ' To fay the truth, between my folicitude in cortriving schemes to procure money, and my extreme anxiety in preferving it; I never had one moment of ease while awake, nor of quiet when in my fleep. In all the characters through which I have passed, I have never undergone half the mifery I suffered in this; and indeed Minos seemed to be of the same opinion: for while I stood trembling and shaking in expectation of my sentence; he bid me go back about my bufiness; for that no body was to be d-n'd in orore worlds than one. And indeed, I have fince learnt, that the devil will not receive a miser.

CHAP.

C H A P. XII.

.

4 1

· a

. f

· a

· fe

n

f

ir.

· li

· W

' W

' th

W

W

re

01

re

lu

' ti

' fo

fo

at

ve

is

' he

is

th

is

bu

W.

in

Sc

What happened to Julian in the characters of a general, an beir, a carpenter, and a beau.

HE next step I took into the world, was at Apollonia in Thrace; where I was born of a beautiful Greek flave, who was the mistress of · Eutyches, a great favourite of the emperor Zeno. That prince, at his restoration, gave me the command of a cohort, I being then but fifteen years of ' age; and a little afterwards, before I had ever feen an army, preferred me, over the heads of all the old officers, to be a tribune.

' As I found an easy access to the Emperor, by means of my father's intimacy with him, he being a very good courtier, or, in other words, a molt prostitute flatterer; so I soon ingratiated myself with · Zeno, and so well imitated my father in flattering him, that he would never part with me from about his person. So that the first armed force I ever be-· held, was that with which Martian furrounded the palace, where I was then thut up with the rest of · the court.

' I was afterwards put at the head of a legion, and ordered to march into Syria, with Theodoric the Goth; that is, I mean my legion was so ordered: for as to myfelf, I remained at court, with the name and pay of a general, without the labour or the danger.

' As nothing could be more gay, i. e. debauched, than Zeno's court, fo the ladies of gay disposition had great fway in it; particularly one, whose name was Fausta, who, though not extremely handsome, was by her wit and spiritliness very agreeable to the Emperor. With her I lived in good correspondence, and we together disposed of all kinds of commissions

in the army, not to those who had most merit, but who would purchase at the highest rate. · vee was now prodigiously thronged by officers, who

returned from the campaigns; who, though they might might have been convinced by daily example, how ineffectual a recommendation their services were,
still continued indefatigable in attendance, and behaved to me with as much observance and respect,
as I should have been entitled to, for making their
fortunes, while I suffered them and their families to
tharve.

Several poets, likewife, addressed verses to me, in which they celebrated my military atchievements: and what, perhaps, may seem strange to us at present, I received all this incense with most greedy vanity, without once reslecting, that as I did not deserve these compliments, they should rather put me

in mind of my defects.

ıl,

of

of

10.

m-

of

en

old

by

ng

oft

ith

ng

out

be-

the

of

on,

oric

der-

the

the

hed,

tion

ame

me,

the

nce,

ions

but

le.

who

hey

ight

My father was now dead, and I became so absolute in the Emperor's grace, that one unacquainted with courts would scarce believe the servility with which all kinds of persons, who entered the walls of the palace, behaved towards me. A bow, a fmile, a nod from me, as I past through cringing crouds, were esteemed as fignal favours, but a gracious word made any one happy; and, indeed, had this real benefit attending it, that it drew on the person, on whom it was bellowed, a very great degree of respect from all others; for these are of current value in courts, and, like notes in trading communities, are affiguable from one to the other. The fmile of a court favourite immediately raises the perfon who receives it, and gives a value to his smile when conferred on an inferior: thus the smile is transferred from one to the other, and the great man at last is the person to discount it. For instance, a very low fellow hath a defire to a place. To whom is he to apply? not to the great man; for to him he hath no access. He therefore applies to A, who is the creature of B, who is the tool of C, who is the flatterer of D, who is the catamite of E, who is the pimp of F, who is the bully of G, who is the buffoon of I, who is the husband of K, who is the whore of L, who is the ballard of M, who is the instrument of the grat man. Thus the smile descending regularly from the great man to A, is discounted

254 A JOURNEY FROM THIS

counted back again, and at last paid by the great

6 b

' j

· f

· n

P

· a

1 a

· t

a

1

.]

· b

It is manifest, that a court would sublist as diffi-

enltly without this kind of coin, as a trading city

without paper credit. Indeed, they differ in this,

that their value is not quite so certain, and a favour-

ite may protest his smile without the danger of

bankruptcy.

In the midst of all this glory, the emperor died, and Anastasius was preserved to the crown. As it was yet uncertain whether I should not continue in favour, I was received as usual at my entrance into the palace, to pay my respects to the new emperor; but I was no sooner rumped by him, than I received the same compliment from all the rest; the whole room, like a regiment of soldiers, turning their backs to me all at once, my smile was now become of equal value with the note of a broken banker, and every one was as cautious not to receive it.

I made as much halte as possible from the court, and shortly after from the city, retreating to the place of my nativity, where I spent the remainder of my days in a retired life, in husbandry, the only amusement for which I was qualified, having nei-

· ther learning nor virtue.

When I came to the gate, Minos again feemed at first doubtful, but at length dismissed me; saying, though I had been guilty of many heinous crimes, in as much as I had, though a general, never been concerned in spilling human blood, I might return again to earth.

I was now again born in Alexandria, and, by great accident, entering into the womb of my daughter in-law, came forth my own grandson, inherit-

ing that fortune which I had before amassed.

Extravagance was now as notoriously my vice,
as avarice had been formerly; and I spent, in
a very short life, what had cost me the labour of
a very long one to rake together. Perhaps, you
will think my present condition was more to be envised than my former: but upon my word it was
very little so; for, by possessing every thing almost
before

before I desired it, I could hardly ever say, I enjoyed my wish: I scarce ever knew the delight of satisfying a craving appetite. Besides, as I never once thought, my mind was useless to me, and I was an absolute stranger to all the pleasures arising from it. Nor, indeed, did my education qualify me for any delicacy in other enjoyments; fo that in the midst of plenty I loathed every thing. Taste for elegance, I had none; and the greatest of corporeal bliffes I felt no more from, than the lowest animal. In a word, as while a mifer I had plenty without doring to use it, so now I had it without appetite.

et

y

s,

of

d,

in

to

r:

ed

ole

eir

ne

er,

rt,

he

der

aly

ei-

ned

ng,

ies,

een

urn

by

gh-

rit-

ice,

in

r of

you

en-

Was

noft

fore

But if I was not very happy in the height of my enjoyment, so I afterwards became perfectly miserable; being foon overtaken by difeafe, and reduced to distress, till at length, with a broken constitution, and broken heart, I ended my wretched days in a goal: nor can I think the sentence of Minos too mild, who condemned me, after having taken a large dose of avarice, to wander three years on the banks of Cocytus, with the knowledge of having fpent the fortune in the person of the grandson, which I had raised in that of the grandfather.

'The place of my birth, on my return to the world, was Constantinople, where my father was a The first thing I remember was, the carpenter. triumph of Belifarius; which was, indeed, a most noble shew: but nothing pleased me so much as the figure of Gelimer, king of the African Vandals, who being led captive on this occasion, reflecting with difdain on the mutation of his own fortune, and on the ridiculous empty pomp of the conqueror, cried out, VANITY, VANITY, ALL IS MERE VA-NITY ! Will be we bos celso bear he weed I sport so

' I was bred up to my father's trade, and you may eafily believe so low a sphere could produce no adventures worth your notice. However, I married a woman I liked, and who proved a very tolerable wife. My days were past in hard labour, but this procured me health, and I enjoyed a homely **supper** Z 2

fupper at night with my wife, with more pleafure than I apprehend greater persons find at their luxurious meals. My life had fcarce any variety in it. and at my death, I advanced to Minos with great confidence of entering the gate: but I was unhap. pily obliged to discover some frauds I had been guilty of in the measure of my work, when I worked by the foot, as well as my laziness when I was employed by the day. On which account when I attempted to pass, the angry judge laid hold on me by the shoulders, and turned me back so violently, s that had I had a neck of flesh and bone, I believe he would have broke it.'

C H A P. XIII.

Julian passes into a fop.

MY scene of action was Rome. I was born into a noble family, and heir to a considerable fortune. On which my parents, thinking I fhould not want any talents, resolved very kindly and wifely to throw none away upon me. The on-' ly instructors of my youth were therefore one Saltator, who taught me several motions for my legs; and one Ficus, whose business was to shew me the · cleanest way (as he called it) of cutting off a man's head. When I was well accomplished in these sciences, I thought nothing more wanting, but what was to be furnished by the several mechanics in · Rome, who dealt in dreffing and adorning the pope. Being therefore well equipped with all which their art could produce, I became at the age of twenty a complete finished beau. And now during fortyfive years I dress'd, I sang and danced, and danced and fang, I bowed and ogled, and ogled and bowed, till in the 66th year of my age, I got cold by over-· heating myself with dancing, and died. ' Minos told me, as I was unworthy of Elysium, fo I was too infignificant to be damned, and there-

fore bad me walk back again.'

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Adventures in the person of a monk.

at

as

1

ne

ho

rn

er-

lly

n-

al-

s;

he

n's

ci-

hat

in

pe.

eir

nty

ty-

ced

ed,

er-

ım,

re-

P.

ORTUNE now placed me in the character of a younger brother of a good house, and I was in my youth fent to school; but learning was now at so low an ebb, that my master himself could hardly construe a sentence of Latin; and as for Greek, he could not read it. With very little knowledge therefore, and with altogether as little virtue, I was fet apart for the church, and at the proper age commenced monk. I lived many years retired in a cell, a life very agreeable to the gloominess of my temper, which was much inclined to despise the world; that is, in other words, to envy all men of superior fortune and qualifications, and, in general, to hate and detelt the human species. Notwithstanding which, I could, on proper occasions, submit to flatter the vilest fellow in nature, which I did one Stephen an eunuch, a favourite of the emperor Justinian II. one of the wickedest wretches whom perhaps the world ever faw. I not only wrote a panegyric on this man, but I commended him as a pattern to all others in my fermons; by which means I fo greatly ingratiated myself with him, that he introduced me to the emperor's presence, where I prevailed so far by the same methods, that I was shortly taken from my cell, and preferred to a place at court. I was no fooner established in the favour of Justinian, than I prompted him to all kinds of cruelty. As I was of a four morose temper, and hated nothing more than the symptoms of happiness appearing in any countenance, I represented all kind of diverfion and amusement as the most horrid fins. I inveighed against chearfulness as levity, and encouraged nothing but gravity, or, to confess the truth to you, hypocrify. The unhappy emperor followed my advice, and incensed the people by such repeated barbarities, that he was at last deposed by them and banished.

Z 3

· I now

I now retired again to my cell, (for historians mistake in saying I was put to death) where I remained fafe from the danger of the irritated mob, whom I cursed in my own heart, as much as they

could curse me.

' Justinian, after three years of his banishment, returned to Constantinople in disguise, and paid me a visit. I at first affected not to know him, and without the least compunction of gratitude for his former favours, intended not to receive him, till a thought immediately suggesting itself to me, how I might convert him to my advantage, I pretended to recollect him; and blaming the shortness of my e memory and badness of my eyes, I sprung forward

and embraced him with great affection.

' My design was to betray him to Apsimar, who, I doubted not, would generously reward such a service. I therefore very earnestly requested him to fpend the whole evening with me; to which he confented. I formed an excuse for leaving him a few minutes, and ran away to the palace to acquaint Apfimar with the guest whom I had then fin my cell. He presently ordered a guard to go with me and seize him: but whether the length of my stay gave him any suspicion, or whether he changed his purpose after my departure, I know not: for at my return, we found he had given us the flip; nor could we with the most diligent search discover him.

· Apsimar being disappointed of his prey, now raged at me; at first denouncing the most dreadful vengeance, if I did not produce the deposed monarch. However, by foothing his passion when at the highest, and afterwards by canting and flattery,

I made a shift to escape his fury. When Justinian was restored, I very considently went to wish him joy of his restoration: but it seems, he had unfortunately heard of my treachery, fo that he at first received me coldly, and afterwards upbraided me openly with what I had done. I perfevered stoutly in denying it, as I knew no evidence could be produced against me; till finding him irreconcileable, I betook myself to reviling him in my my sermons, and on every other occasion, as an enemy to the church and good men, and as an insidel and heretic, an atheist, a heathen, and an Arian. This I did immediately on his return, and before he gave those flagrant proofs of his inhumanity, which afterwards sufficiently verified all I had said.

b,

bi

iis

to

by

rd

10,

r.

to

n-

W

nt

ny

ne

ay

his

ny

ıld

WO

ful

at

ry,

tly

ns,

nat

p-

er-

nce

ir-

in

my

Luckily, I died on the same day, when a great number of those forces which Justinian had sent against the Thracian Bosphorus, and who had executed such unheard-of cruelties there, perished. As every one of these was cast into the bottomless pit, Minos was so tired with condemnation, that he proclaimed that all present, who had not been concerned in that bloody expedition, might, if they pleased, return to the other world. I took him at his word, and presently turning about began my journey.

C H A P. XV.

Julian passes into the character of a fiddler.

OME was now the feat of my nativity. My mother was an African, a woman of no great beauty, but a favourite, I suppose from her piety, to Pope Gregory II. Who was my father I know not; but I believe no very confiderable man: for after the death of that pope, who was, out of his religion, a very good friend to my mother, we fell into great distress, and were at length reduced to walk the streets of Rome; nor had any of us any other support but a fiddle, on which I played with pretty tolerable skill: for as my genius turned naturally to music, so I had been in my youth very early instructed at the expence of the good pope. 'This afforded us but a very poor livelihood: for ' tho' I had often a numerous crowd of hearers, few ever thought themselves obliged to contribute the ' smallest pittance to the poor starving wretch who had given them pleasure. Nay, some of the graver fort, after an hour's attention to my music, have ' gone away shaking their heads, and crying, it was a shame such vagabonds were suffered to stay in the city. ' To

To fay the truth, I am confident the fiddle would not have kept us alive, had we entirely depended on the generolity of my hearers. My mother therefore was forced to use her own industry; and while I was foothing the ears of the crowd, she applied to their pockets, and that generally with fuch good fucceis, that we now began to enjoy a very comfortable subsistence; and, indeed, had we had the least prudence or forecast, might have soon ac-· quired enough to enable us to quit this dangerous and dishonourable way of life; but I know not what is the reason, that money got with labour and fafety is constantly preserved, while the produce of danger and eate is commonly spent as easily, and often as wickedly as acquired. Thus we proportioned our expences rather by what we had, than what we · wanted, or even defired; and on obtaining a con-· fiderable booty, we have even forced nature into the · most profligate extravagance, and have been wicked without inclination.

6 2

· f

6 e

·t

· i

. 6

. 1

6 V

· v

· t

-1

· r

. .

. 8

· A

· fe

. b

· t

· e

4 0

· I

We carried on this method of thievery for a long time without detection; but as Fortune generally leaves persons of extraordinary ingenuity in the lurch at last; so did she us: for my poor mother was taken in the sact, and together with my self, as her accomplice, hurried before a magi-

Luckily for us, the person who was to be our judge, was the greatest lover of music in the whole city, and had often sent for me to play to him, for which, as he had given me very small rewards, perhaps his gratitude now moved him: but whatever was his motive he browbeat the informers against us, and treated their evidence with so little favour, that their mouths were soon stopped, and we dismissed with honour; acquitted, I should rather have faid: for we were not suffered to depart, till I had given the judge several tunes on the siddle.

We escaped the better on this occasion, because the person robbed happened to be a poet; which gave the judge, who was a facetious person, many opportunities of jesting. He said, poets and musicians

cians should agree together, seeing they had mar-· ried fisters, which he afterwards explained to be the fifter arts. And when the piece of gold was produced, he burst into a loud laugh, and said it must · be the golden age when poets had gold in their pockets, and in that age there could be no robbers. He made many more jests of the same kind, but a

' finall tafte will fuffice.

It is a common faying, that men should take warning by any fignal delivery; but I cannot approve the justice of it: for to me it seems, that the acquittal of a guilty person should rather inspire ' him with confidence, and it had this effect on us: for we now laughed at the law and despised its punishments, which we found were to be escaped even against positive evidence. We imagined the late example was rather a warning to the accuser than the criminal, and accordingly proceeded in the most

impudent and flagitious manner.

5

' Among other robberies, one night being admitted by the fervants into the house of an opulent priest, ' my mother took an opportunity, whilst the servants were dancing to my tunes, to convey away a filver vessel; this she did without the least facriligious intention; but it seems the cup, which was a pretty large one, was dedicated to holy uses, and only borrowed by the priest on an entertainment which he ' made for some of his brethren. We were immedi-' ately pursued upon this robbery, (the cup being taken ' in our possession,) and carried before the same magifrate, who had before behaved to us with so much gentleness: but his countenance was now changed; for the moment the priest appeared against us, his feverity was as remarkable as his candour had been before, and we were both ordered to be stript and whipt through the streets.'

'This sentence was executed with great severity, the priest himself attending and encouraging the executioner, which he said he did for the good of our fouls: but though our backs were both flay'd, neither my mother's torments nor my own afflicted me so much, as the indignity offered to my poor

fiddle,

fiddle, which was carried in triumph before me, and treated with a contempt by the multitude, intimating a great fcorn for the science I had the honour to profess; which, as it is one of the noblest inventions of men, and as I had been always in the highest degree proud of my excellence in it, I suffered so

86]

...

216

much from the ill treatment my fiddle received, that

I would have given all my remainder of skin to

have preserved it from this affront.

' My mother survived the whipping a very short time, and I was now reduced to great diffress and misery; till a young Roman of considerable rank took a fancy to me, received me into his family, and conversed with me in the utmost familiarity. He had a violent attachment to mufic, and would learn to play on the fiddle; but through want of genius for the science, he never made any conside. rable progress. However, I flattered his performance, and he grew extravagantly fond of me for fo doing. Had I continued this behaviour, I might possibly have reaped the greatest advantages from his kindness: but I had raised his own opinion of his musical abilities so high, that he now began to prefer his skill to mine, a presumption I could not bear. One day as we were playing in concert he was horribly out; nor was it possible, as he destroyed the harmony, to avoid telling him of it. Instead of receiving my correction, he answered, it was my blunder, and not his, and that I had miftaken the key. Such an affront from my own icho-Iar was beyond human patience; I flew into a violent passion, I slung down my instrument in a rage, and fwore, I was not to be taught music at my age. · He answered with as much warmth, nor was he to be instructed by a strolling fiddler. The dispute ended with a challenge to play a prize before judges. This wager was determined in my favour; but the purchase was a dear one; for I lost my friend by it, who now twitting me with all his kindness, with my former ignominious punishment, and the destitute condition from which I had been by his bounty relieved, discarded me for ever. · While While I lived with this gentleman, I became known, among others, to Sabina, a lady of diffincition, and who valued herself much on her take for music. She no sooner heard of my being discarded, than she took me into her house, where I was extremely well cloathed and fed. Notwithstanding which, my fituation was far from agreeable; for I was obliged to submit to her constant reprehensions before company t which gave me the greater uneafiness, because they were always wrong; nor am I certain that she did not by these provocations contribute to my death; for as experience had taught " me to give up my refentment to my bread, so my passions, for want of outward vent, preyed inwardly on my vitals, and perhaps occasioned the distemper of which I fickened.

d

3.

So

ht

m

of

to

ot

he

e-

n-

it

if-

0.

ge,

ge.

to

ite

esi

he

it,

ith

Ai-

aty

ile

'The lady who, amidst all the faults she found, was very fond of me; nay, probably was the fonder of me the more faults she found; immediately " called in the aid of three celebrated physicians. The doctors, being well feed, made me feven visits in three days; and two of them were at the door to visit me the eighth time, when being acquainted that I was just dead, they shook their heads and de-

' parted.

When I came to Minos, he asked me with a smile whether I had brought my fiddle with me; and receiving an answer in the negative, he bid me get " about my business, saying, it was well for me that the devil was no lover of music.'

C H A P. XVI.

The history of the wife man.

I NOW returned to Rome, but in a very different character. Fortune had now allotted me a · ferious part to act. I had even in my infancy a grave disposition, nor was I ever feen to smile; which infused an opinion into all about me, that I was a child of great folidity; some foreseeing that I " should be a judge, and others a bishop. At two ' years old my father presented me with a rattle, which which I broke to pieces with great indignation. This the good parent, being extremely wife, regarded as an eminent symptom of my wildom, and cried out

in a kind of extafy, Well faid, boy, I warrant thou

. 0

· h

(5

·t

· t

4 8

· I

· t

.

· t

*]

. 1

makest a great man.

At school, I could never be persuaded to play with my mates; not that I spent my hours in learning, to which I was not in the least addicted, nor indeed had I any talents for it. However, the folemnity of my carriage won so much on my master, who was a most fagacious person, that I was his chief favourite, and my example on all occasions was recommended to the other boys, which filled them with envy, and me with pleasure; but tho' they envied me, they all paid me that involuntary respect, which it is the curse attending this passion to bear towards its object.

' I had now obtained universally the character of a very wife young man, which I did not altogether purchase without pains; for the restraint I laid on myself in abstaining from the several diversions adapted to my years, cost me many a yearning: but the pride which I inwardly enjoyed in the fan-

cied dignity of my character, made me some a-

mends.

' Thus I past on, without any thing very memorable happening to me till I arrived at the age of twenty-three; when unfortunately I fell acquainted with a young Neapolitan lady whose name was Ariadne. Her beauty was so exquisite, that her first fight made a violent impression on me; this was again improved by her behaviour, which was most genteel, easy, and affable; lastly, her conversation compleated the conquest. In this she discovered a frong and lively understanding, with the fweetest and most benign temper. This lovely creature was · about eighteen when I first unhappily beheld her at Rome, in a visit to a relation, with whom I had great intimacy. As our interviews at first were extremely frequent, my passions were captivated before I apprehended the least danger; and the sooner probably, as the young lady herfelf, to whom I connoidu . 2 ' fulted

265

' fulted every method of recommendation, was not

displeased with my being her admirer.

is

38

ıt

u

h

0

d

y

0

ef

m

]-

Ir

n

ft

n

a

LS

t

d

.

-

r

d

' Ariadne having spent three months at Rome, now returned to Naples, bearing my heart with her: on the other hand, I had all the affurances confishent with the constraint under which the most s perfect modelly lays a young woman, that her own heart was not entirely unaffected. I foon found her absence gave me an uneasiness not easy to be borne, or to remove. I now first applied to diversions (of the graver fort, particularly to music) but in vain; they rather raised my desires and heightened my anguish. My passion at length grew so violent, that I began to think of fatisfying it. As the first step to this, I cautiously enquired into the circumstances of Ariadne's parents, with which I was hitherto unacquainted; though, indeed, I did not apprehend they were extremely great, notwithstanding the handsome appearance of their daughter at Rome. 'Upon examination, her fortune exceeded my expectation; but was not sufficient to justify my marri-' age with her in the opinion of the wife and prudent. I had now a violent struggle between wisdom and happiness, in which, after several grievous ' pangs, wisdom got the better; I could by no means prevail with myself to sacrifice that character of profound wifdom, wich I had with fuch uniform conduct obtained, and with fuch caution hitherto preferved. I therefore resolved to conquer my affection, whatever it cost me, and indeed it did not cost me a · little.

'While I was engaged in this conflict (for it lasted a long time), Ariadne returned to Rome: her presence was a terrible enemy to my wisdom, which, even in her absence, had with great disticulty stood its ground. It seems (as she hath since told me in Elysium with much merriment) I had made the same impressions on her which she had made on me. Indeed, I believe my wisdom would have been totally subdued by this surprize, had it not cunningly suggested to me a method of satisfying my passion without doing any injury to my reputation. This A a

was my engaging her privately as a mistress, which

was at that time reputable enough at Rome, pro-

* vided the affair was managed with an air of flyness

and gravity, though the secret was known to the

whole city.

I immediately set about this project, and employed every art and engine to effect it. I had particularly bribed her priest, and an old semale acquaintance and distant relation of hers, into my interest: but all was in vain; her virtue opposed the
passion in her breast as strongly as wisdom had op-

posed it in mine. She received my proposals with

the utmost disdain, and presently resused to see or hear from me any more.

She returned again to Naples, and left me in a worse condition than before. My days I now passed in the most irksome uneasiness, and my nights were restless and sleepless. The story of our amour was now pretty public, and the ladies talked of our match as certain: but my acquaintance denied their assent, saying, No, no, he is too wise to marry so imprudently. This their opinion gave me, I own, very great pleasure; but, to say the truth, scarce compensated the pangs I suffered to

* preserve it. One day, while I was balancing with myfelf, and had almost resolved to enjoy my happiness at the price of my character, a friend brought me word that Ariadne was married. This news struck me to the foul, and though I had resolution enough to maintain my gravity before him (for which I fuffered not a little the more), the moment I was alone, I threw myself into the most violent fit of despair, and would willingly have parted with wisdom, fortune, and every thing else, to have retrieved her: but that was impossible, and I had now nothing but time to hope a cure from. This was very tedious in performing it, and the longer as Ariadne had married a Roman cavalier, was now become my near neighbour, and I had the mortification of feesing her make the best of wives, and of having the

happi-

WORLD TO THE NEXT, &c. 267

happiness, which I had lost, every day before my eyes.

· If I fuffered so much on account of my wisdom; ' in having refused Ariadne, I was not much more obliged to it for procuring me a rich widow, who was recommended to me by an old friend, as a very prudent match; and, indeed, so it was, her fortune being superior to mine, in the same proportion as that of Ariadne had been inferior. I therefore embraced this proposal, and my character of wisdom foon pleaded fo effectually for me with the widow, who was herself a woman of great gravity and discretion, that I soon succeeded; and as soon as decency would permit (of which this lady was the strictest observer,) we were married, being the fecond day of the fecond week, of the fecond year; ' after her husband's death: for she faid, she thought some period of time above the year had a great air of decorum.

But, prudent as this lady was, the made me miferable. Her person was far from being lovely;
but her temper was intolerable. During fifteen years
cohabitation, I never passed a single day without heartily cursing her, and the hour in which we came together. The only comfort I received in the midst
of the highest torments, was from continually hearing the prudence of my match commended by all my

· acquaintance.

1-

1-

10

P- .

th

or

in

W

its

ur

ur

ed

to

ve

the

to

elf,

at

ord

me

to

uf-

ne,

air,

or-

er:

but

ous

had

my

fee-

the

ppi-

'Thus you see, in the affairs of love, I bought the reputation of wildom pretty dear. In other matters, I had it somewhat cheaper; not that hypocrify, which was the price I gave for it, gives one no pain: I have refused myself a thousand little amusements with a seigned contempt, while I have really had an inclination to them. I have often almost choaked myself to restrain from laughing at a jest, and (which was perhaps to myself the least hurtful of all my hypocrify) have heartily enjoyed a book in my closet, which I have spoke with detestation of in public. To sum up my history in short, as I had sew adventures worth remembering, my whole life was one constant lie: and happy

Aa2

· would

would it have been for me, if I could as thoroughly have imposed on myself, as I did on others: for reflection, at every turn, would often remind me I was not fo wife as people thought me; and this considerably embittered the pleasure I received from the public commendation of my wisdom. This self-admonition, like a memento mori or mortalis es, must be, in my opinion, a very dangerous enemy to flattery; indeed, a weight sufficient to counterbalance all the false praise of the world. But whether it be that the generality of wife men do not reflect at all, or whether they have, from a constant imposition on others, contracted fuch a habit of deceit, as to deceive themselves, I will not determine; it is, I believe, most certain, that very few wife men know themselves what fools they are, more than the world doth. Good gods! could one but see what passes in the closet of wisdom! how ridiculous a fight must it be to behold the wife man, who defpifes gratify ing his palate, devouring custard; the sober wife man, with his dram bottle; or, the anticarnalist (if I may be allowed the expression) chuckling over a b-y book or picture, and perhaps carefling his house-maid!

But to conclude a character, in which I apprehend I made as absurd a figure as in any in which I trod the stage of earth, my wisdom at last put an end to

itself; that is, occasioned my dissolution.

A relation of mine, in the eastern part of the em-

pire, disinherited his son, and left me his heir.

'This happened in the depth of winter, when I was in my grand climacteric, and had just recovered of a dangerous disease. As I had all the reason imaginable, to apprehend the family of the deceased would conspire against me, and embezzle as much as they could, I advised with a grave and wise friend, what was proper to be done; whether I should go myself, or employ a notary on this occasion, and defer my journey to the spring. To say the truth, I was most inclined to the latter; the rather as my circumstances were extremely flourishing, as I was advanced in years, and had not one person in the world, to whom

whom I should with pleasure bequeath my fortune

at my death.

e-

1-

he

d.

fle

t-

ce

be

11,

on

e-

e-

W

ld

Tes

nft

y.

ise

(if

his

nd

od

to

me

ed

12-

ald

ley

nat

y-

fer.

vas

m-

ced

to

m

My friend told me, he thought my question admitted no manner of doubt or debate; that common prudence absolutely required my immediate departure; adding, that if the same good luck had happened to him, he would have been already on his journey; for, continued he, a man who knows the world as well as you, would be inexcusable to give persons such an opportunity of cheating you, who, you must be assured, will be too well inclined; and as for employing a notary, remember that excellent maxim, Ne sacias per alium, quod sieri potest per te. I own the badness of the season, and your very late recovery are unlucky circumstances; but a wise man must get over difficulties, when necessity obliges him to encounter them.

The duty of a wife man made an irrefillible impreffion, and I took the necessity for granted, without
examination. I accordingly set forward the next
morning; very tempestuous weather soon overtook
me; I had not travelled three days before I relapsed

" into my fever, and died.

I was now as cruelly disappointed by Minos, as F had formerly been happily fo. Ladvanced with the utmost confidence to the gate, and really imagined L. hould have been admitted by the wisdom of my countenance, even without any questions asked : but this. was not my case; and, to my great surprise, Minos,. with a menacing voice, called out to me-You: "Mr there, with the grave countenance, whither for fast, pray? Will you please, before you move any farther forwards, to give me a short account of your transactions below. I then began, and recounted to him my whole history, still expecting, at the end! of every period, that the gate would be ordered to fly open; but I was obliged to go quite through with it, and then Minos, after some little consideration, spoke to me as follows:

You, Mr Wiseman; stand forth, if you please. Believe me, Sir, a trip back again to earth will be

Aa.3

one of the wisest steps you ever took, and really more to the honour of your wisdom, than any you have hitherto taken. On the other fide, nothing could be simpler, than to endeavour at Elysium; for who, but a fool, would carry a commodity, which is of fuch infinite value in one place, into another where it is of none. But without attempting to offend your gravity with a jest, you must return to the · place from whence you came: for Elyfium was never defigned for those who are too wife to be happy.' 'This sentence confounded me greatly, especially · as it feemed to threaten me with carrying my wifdom back again to earth. I told the judge, though he would not admit me at the gate, I hoped I had committed no crime, while alive, which merited my being wife any longer. He answered me, I must take my chance as to that matter, and immediately we turned our backs to each other.'

C H A P. XVII.

Julian enters into the person of a King.

WAS now born at Oviedo in Spain. My father's name was Veremond, and I was adopted by my uncle, king Alphonso the Chaste. I don't recollect in all the pilgrimages I have made on earth, that I ever past a more miserable infancy than now; being under the utmost confinement and restraint, and furrounded with physicians, who were ever-dosing me; and tutors, who were continually plaguing me with their instructions; even those hours of leisure, which my inclination would have spent in play, were al-I lotted to tedious pomp and ceremony, which, at an age wherein I had no ambition to enjoy the fervility of courtiers, enflaved me more than it could the meanest of them. However, as I advanced towards manhood, my condition made me fome amends; for the most beautiful women of their own accord threw out lures for me, and I had the happiness, which no man in an inferior degree can arrive at, of enjoying the most delicious creatures, without the previous and tiresome ceremonies of courtship, unless with the most simple, young, and unexperienced.
As for the court ladies, they regarded me rather as
men do the most lovely of the other sex; and tho
they outwardly retained some appearance of modesty, they in reality rather considered themselves as
receiving than conferring favours.

Another happiness I enjoyed, was in conferring favours of another sort; for as I was extremely good-natured and generous, so I had daily opportunities of satisfying those passions. Besides my own princely allowance, which was very bountiful, and with which I did many liberal and good actions, I recommended numberless persons of merit in distress to the king's notice, most of whom were provided

for.

lly

ou

ng

n;

ich

ner

of-

the

ver

illy

vif-

igh

nad

my

fluit

ely

er's

my

lect

at I

ing

fur-

me;

vith

nich

al-

t an

lity

the

ards

ids ;

ord

iess,

at,

the

pre-

Indeed, had I sufficiently known my blest situation at this time, I should have grieved at nothing more than the death of Alphonso, by which the burden of government devolved upon me: but so blindly sond is ambition, and such charms doth it fancy in the power, and pomp, and splendor of a crown, that though I vehemently loved that king, and had the greatest obligations to him, the thoughts of succeeding him obliterated my regret at his loss, and the wish for my approaching coronation, dried my eyes at his funeral.

But my fondness for the name of king, did not make me forgetful of those, over whom I was to reign. I considered them in the light in which a tender father regards his children, as persons whose well-being God hath entrusted to my care; and again, in that in which a prudent lord respects his tenants, as those on whose wealth and grandeur he is to build his own. Both these considerations in spired me with the greatest care for their welfare,

and their good was my first and ultimate concern.
The usurper Mauregas had impiously obliged himself, and his successors to pay to the Moors every year an infamous tribute of an hundred young virgins: from this cruel and scandalous imposition I resolved to relieve my country. Accordingly,

when

when their emperor Abderames the second had the audaciousness to make this demand of me, instead of complying with it, I ordered his ambassadors to be driven away with all imaginable ignominy, and would have condemned them to death, could I have done it without a manifest violation of the law of nations.

I now raised an immense army. At the levying of which, I made a speech from the throne, acquainting my subjects with the necessity, and the reasons of the war in which I was going to engage: which I convinced them I had undertaken for their ease and safety, and not for satisfying any wanton ambition or revenging any private pique, of my own. They all declared unanimously, that they would venture their lives, and every thing dear to them, in my defence, and in the support of the honour of my crown. Accordingly, my levies were instantly complete, sufficient numbers being only left to till the land; churchmen, even bishops themselves, enlisting themselves under my banners.

The armies met at Alveda, where we were difcomfitted with immense loss, and nothing but the lucky intervention of the night could have saved our

whole army.

I retreated to the summit of a hill, where I abandoned myself to the highest agonies of gries, not so much for the danger in which I then saw my crown, as for the loss of those miserable wretches, who had exposed their lives at my command. I could not then avoid this reslection; That if the deaths of these people in a war, undertaken absorbutely for their protection, could give me such concern; what horror must I have felt, if, like princes greedy of dominion, I had sacrificed such numbers to my own pride, vanity, and ridiculous lust of power!

After having vented my forrows for some time in this manner, I began to consider by what means I might possibly endeavour to retrieve this missortune; when resecting on the great number of priests I had in my army, and on the prodigious force.

force of superstition, a thought luckily suggested itfelf to me, to counterfeit that St James had appeared to me in a vision, and had promised me the victory. While I was ruminating on this, the bishop of Najara came opportunely to me. As I did not intend to communicate the fecret to him, I took another method, and instead of answering any thing the bishop said to me, I pretended to talk to St James, as if he had been really present; till at length, after having spoke these things which I thought sufficient, and thanked the saint aloud for his promise of the victory, I turned about to the bishop, and embracing him with a pleased countenance, protested I did not know he was present; and then informing him of this supposed vision, I asked him, if he had not himself seen the saint? He an-' swered me, he had; and afterwards proceeded to 'assure me, that this appearance of St James was entirely owing to his prayers: for that he was his tutelar faint. He added, he had a vision of him a few hours before, when he promised him a victory over the infidels, and acquainted him at the same time of the vacancy of the see of Toledo. Now this news being really true, tho' it had happened fo lately, that I had not heard of it, (nor, indeed, was it well possible I should, considering the great ' distance of the way) when I was afterwards acquainted with it, a little staggered me, though far from being superstitious; till being informed, that the ' bishop had lost three horses on a late expedition, I was fatisfied.

The next morning, the bishop, at my desire, mounted the rostrum, and trumpeted forth this vision so effectually, which he said he had that evening twice seen with his own eyes, that a spirit being an to be insused over the whole army, which rendered them superior to almost any force: the bishop insisted, that the least doubt of success was giving the lie to the saint, and a damnable sin, and he took upon him in his name to promise them vic-

tory.

8

e

of

g

t.

19

h

fe:

i-

A.

ld

in

of.

ly

H

n-

f-

he

UF

I

ef,

ny.

es

he

0.

n.

ces.

ers .

of.

ne:

ns.

)r-.

of

us

ce.

274 A JOURNEY FROM THIS

the effect of enthuliasm; for having contrived another * stratagem to strengthen what the bishop had faid, the soldiers fought more like suries than men. My stratagem was this: I had about me a dexterous sellow, who had been formerly a pimp in my amours. Him I dressed up in a strange antic dress, with a pair of white colours in his right hand, a red cross in his lest, and having disguised him so that no one could know him, I placed him on a white horse, and ordered him to ride to the head of the army, and cry out, Follow St James! These words were reiterated by all the troops, who attacked the enemy with such intrepidity, that notwithstanding our inferiority of numbers, we soon obtained a complete victory.

f W

4 0

· in

* tl

· ra

· W

· m

h

4 to

W W

4 0

· fr

· to

ti

fe

· W

w W

4. de

ar

fi

m

fa

lo

C

ag

se:

m

vi

m

er te

g

V

tl

d

ir

" b

The bishop was come up by the time that the enemy was routed, and acquainting us, that he had met St James by the way, and that he had informed him of what had past, he added that he had express orders from the faint to receive a considerable sum for his use, and that a certain tax on corn and wine should be settled on his church for ever; and lastly, that a horseman's pay should be allowed for the future to the saint himself, of which he and his successors were appointed receivers. The army received these demands with such acclamations, that I was obliged to comply with them, as I could by no means discover the imposition, nor do I believe

I should have gained any credit if I had.

I had now done with the faint, but the bishop had not; for about a week afterwards, lights were feen in a wood near where the battle was fought; and in a short time afterwards, they discovered his tomb at the same place. Upon this, the bishop made me a visit, and forced me to go thither to build a church to him, and largely endow it. In a word, the good man so plagued me with miracle after miracle, that I was forced to make interest

^{*} This filly flory is told as a solemn truth, i. e. that St James really appeared in the manner this sellow is described, by Mariana, L. 1. § 78.

with the pope to convey him to Toledo, to get rid

But to proceed to other matters.—There was an inferior officer, who had behaved very bravely in the battle against the Moors, and had received seve-' ral wounds, who folicited me for preferment; which I was about to confer on him, when one of my ' ministers came to me in a fright, and told me, that he had promised the post I designed for this man to the fon of count Alderedo; and that the Count, who was a powerful person, would be greatly disobliged at the refusal, as he had fent for his son from school to take possession of it. I was obliged to agree with my minister's reasons, and at the same time recommended the wounded soldier to be preferred by him, which he faithfully promised he would: but I met the poor wretch fince in Elyfium, who informed me he was afterwards starved to death.

d

h

f

e

d

.

le

d

bi

70

is

e-

at

by

ve

op

re

t;

op

to

a

cle

eft

nes //a-

th

' None, who hath not been himself a prince, nor any prince, till his death, can conceive the impofitions daily put on them by their favourites and ministers; so that princes are often blamed for the, faults of others. The count of Saldagne, had been long confined in prison, when his son D. Barnard del Carpio, who had performed the greatest actions against the Moors, entreated me, as a reward for his fervice, to grant him his father's liberty. The old man's punishment had been so tedious, and the fervices of the young one to fingularly eminent, that I was very inclinable to grant the request: but my ministers strongly opposed it. They told me, ' My " glory demanded revenge for the dishonour offered " to my family; that so positive a demand carried " with it rather the air of menace than entreaty. That " the vain detail of his fervices, and the recompence " due to them, was an injurious reproach. " grant what had been so haughtily demanded, would " argue in the monarch both weakness and timidity; in a word, that to remit the punishment inflicted " by my predecessors, would be to condemn their judgment. Lastly, one told me in a whisper, his whole " family.

family are enemies to your house.' By these means the ministers prevailed. The young lord took the refusal so ill, that he retired from court, and abandoned himself to despair, whilst the old one languished in prison. By which means, as I have fince discovered, I lost the use of two of my best

fubjects.

'To confess the truth, I had by means of my mis nisters conceived a very unjust opinion of my whole people, whom I fancied to be daily conspiring e against me, and to entertain the most disloyal thoughts; when in reality (as I have known fince ' my death) they held me in universal respect and efteem. This is a trick, I believe, too often played with fovereigns, who, by fuch means, are prevented from that open intercourse with their subjects, which as it would greatly endear the person of the prince to the people, fo might it often prove dangerous to a minister, who was consulting his own interest only at the expence of both. I believe I have now recounted to you the most material passages of my f life; for, I affure you, there are some incidents in the lives of kings not extremely worth relating. Every thing which passes in their minds and fami-! lies, is not attended with the splendor which surfrounds their throne: indeed, there are fome hours wherein the naked king and the naked cobler can fcarce be diftinguished from each other.

· Had it not been, however, for my ingratitude to Bernard del Carpio, I believe this would have been my last pilgrimage on earth: for, as to the story of St James, I thought Minos would have burst his fides at it: but he was so displeased with me on the

other account, that, with a frown, he cried out, Get thee back again, king. Nor would he suffer

, spondbeithicher die bedar det beiter beite beschieben.

the many of the first the desired and the state of the st

me to fay another word.'

THE PARTY OF

STATED HOLDER AND STATE OF STATE OF STATE OF STATE OF

to the first the business of the column to t

C H A P. XVIII.

Julian passes into a fool.

e

al

ce

nd

bs

ed

ch

ce

us

est

wo

my

in

ng.

ni.

ur-

urs

can

to

een

of

his

the

out,

ffer

HE next visit I made to the world, was performed in France, where I was born in the court of Lewis III. and had afterwards the honour to be preferred to be fool to the prince, who was furnamed Charles the Simple. But in reality, I know not whether I might so properly be said to have acted the fool in his court, as to have made fools of all others in it. Certain it is, I was very far from being what is generally understood by that word, being a most cunning, designing, arch knave. I knew very well the folly of my master, and of many others, and how to make my advantage of this knowledge. I was as dear to Charles the Simple, as the player Paris was to Domitian, and, like him, bestowed all " manner of offices and honours on whom I pleased. · This drew me a great number of followers among the courtiers, who really mistook me for a fool, and yet flattered my understanding. There was particularly in the court a fellow, who had neither honour, honesty, sense, wit, courage, beauty, nor indeed any one good quality either of mind or body, to recommend him; but was at the same time, perhaps, as cunning a monster as ever lived. This gentleman took it into his head to lift under my ban-' ner, and purfued me fo very affiduously with flattery, constantly reminding me of my good fense, that I grew immoderately fond of him : for though flattery is not most judiciously applied to qualities which the persons flattered possess, yet as, notwithstanding my being well affured of my own parts. I past in the whole court for a fool, this flattery was a very sweet " morfel to me. I therefore got this fellow preferred to a bishopric, but I lost my flatterer by it, for he never afterwards faid a civil thing to me. 'I never baulked my imagination for the groffness of the reflection on the character of the greatest noble,

Bb

may, even the king himself; of which I will give you

a very bold instance. One day, his simple Majesty

told me, he believed I had so much power, that his

people looked on me as the king, and himfelf as my

fool. At this I pretended to be angry, as with an affront. Why, how now, fays the king, are you

ashamed of being a king? No, Sir, says I, but I am

· devilifhly ashamed of my fool.'

Hebert, earl of Vermandois, had by my means been restored to the favour of the Simple, (for so I

" used always to call Charles.) He afterwards pre-

vailed with the king to take the city of Arras from Earl Baldwin, by which means Hebert, in exchange

for this city, had Peronne restored to him by Count

Altmar. Baldwin came to court, in order to pro-

cure the restoration of his city; but either through

pride or ignorance, neglected to apply to me. As

I met him at court during his solicitation, I told

him he did not apply the right way; he answered roughly, he should not ask a fool's advice: I replied,

I did not wonder at his prejudice, fince he had

miscarried already by following a fool's advice : but

I told him, there were fools who had more interest

than that he had brought with him to court. He

answered me surlily, he had no fool with him, for

he travelled alone. Ay, my Lord, says I, I often

travel alone, and yet they will have it I always carry

a fool with me. This raised a laugh among the by-

"Randers, on which he gave me a blow. I immedi-

ately complained of this usage to the Simple, who

dismissed the Earl from court with very hard words,

I give you these rather as a specimen of my in-

terest and impudence than of my wit; indeed my jests were commonly more admired than they ought

to be: for perhaps, I was not in reality much more

a wit than a fool. But with the latitude of un-

bounded scurrility, it is easy enough to attain the

character of wit, especially in a court, where, as all

· persons hate and envy one another heartily, and are

at the same time obliged by the constrained behavi-

our of civility to profess the greatest liking, so it is,

. 4 11

The will be dutied the same and in the same a con-

and

21

fo

fo

25

th

lig

a

ui

th

wa

fo

tin

wi

de

wl

ple

Wi

the

m

cei

on

kir

Ia

dif

ey

it :

dif

. VO

In

vic

da

wa

the

gu

bo

eq

ma

me

the

ty

is

y

an

Du

m

ns

1

.6-

m

ge

nt

.0-

gh

As

bld

ed

ed,

ad

ut

eft

He

for

ten

Ty

y-

di-

ho

ds,

in-

my

ght

ore

ın-

the

all

are

vi-

is,

ind

and must be wonderfully pleasant to them to see the follies of their acquaintance exposed by a third person. Besides, the opinion of the court is as uniform as the fashion, and is always guided by the will of the prince or of the favourite. I doubt not that Caligula's horse was universally held in his court to be a good and able consul: in the same manner was I universally acknowledged to be the wittiest fool in the world. Every word I said raised laughter, and was held to be a jest, especially by the ladies; who sometimes laughed before I had discovered my sentiment, and often repeated that as a jest which I did not even intend as one.

I was as severe on the ladies as on the men, and with the fame impunity; but this at last cost me dear: for once having joked the beauty of a lady, whose name was Adelaide, a favourite of the Simple's, she pretended to smile and be pleased at my wit with the rest of the company; but in reality, the highly refented it, and endeavoured to undermine me with the king. In which she so greatly succeeded (for what can't a favourite woman do with one who deferves the furname of Simple?) that the king grew every day more referved to me, and when I attempted any freedom, gave me such marks of his displeasure, that the courtiers (who have all hawk's eyes at a flight from the fovereign) foon difcerned it : and indeed had I been blind enough not to have discovered that I had lost ground in the Simple's favour, by his own change in his carriage towards me, I must have found it, nay even felt it, in the behaviour of the courtiers; for as my company was two days before folicited with the utmost eagerness, it was now rejected with as much fcorn. I was now the jest of the ushers and pages; and an officer of the guards, on whom I was a little jocofe, gave me a box on the ear, bidding me make free with my equals. This very fellow had been my butt for many years, without daring to lift his hand against me.

But though I visibly perceived the alteration in the Simple, I was utterly unable to make any guess

B b 2

at

at the occasion. I had not the least suspicion of A. delaide; for besides her being a very good-humoured woman, I had often made fevere jests on her reputation, which I had all the reason imaginable to be-· lieve had given her no offence. But I foon perceived that a woman will bear the most bitter censures on · her morals, easier than the smallest reflection on her · beauty: for the now declared publicly, that I ought to be dismissed from court, as the stupidest of fools; and one in whom there was no diversion; and that he wondered how any person could have so little tafte, as to imagine I had any wit. This speech was echoed through the drawing-room, and agreed to by all present. Every one now put on an unusual gra-· vity on their countenance whenever I spoke; and tit was as much out of my power to raise a laugh, as · formerly it had been for me to open my mouth without one.

While my affairs were in this posture, I went one day into the circle, without my fool's dress. The · Simple, who would still speak to me, cried out, So, fool, what's the matter now? Sir, answered I, fools · are like to be so common a commodity at court, that I am weary of my coat. How dost thou mean? an-· fwered the Simple; what can make them commoner now than usual?-O, Sir, said I, there are ladies here make your Majesty a fool every day of their · lives. The Simple took no notice of my jest, and · feveral present said my bones ought to be broke for my impudence; but it pleased the queen, who knowing Adelaide, whom she hated, to be the cause of my disgrace, obtained me of the king, and took me into her fervice; so that I was henceforth called the queen's fool, and in her court received the same honour, and had as much wit as I had formerly had in the king's. But as the queen had really no power unless over her own domestics, I was not treated in general with that complacence, nor did I receive those bribes and presents, which had once fallen to my share.

Nor did this confined respect continue long: for the queen, who had in fact no taste for humour, soon

foon grew fick of my foolery, and forgetting the cause for which she had taken me, neglected me so much, that her court grew intolerable to my temper,

and I broke my heart and died.

'Minos laughed heartily at several things in my story, and then telling me, No one played the fool in Elysium, bid me go back again.'

C H A P. XIX.

Julian appears in the character of a beggar.

I NOW returned to Rome, and was born into a very poor and numerous family, which, to be honest with you, procured its livelihood by begging. This, if you was never yourself of the calling, you do not know, I suppose, to be as regular a trade as any other; to have its several rules and secrets, or mysteries, which to learn requires perhaps as tedious an apprenticeship as those of any crast whatever.

The first thing we are taught is the countenance miserable. This indeed Nature makes much easier to some than others: but there are none who cannot accomplish it, if they begin early enough in youth, and before the muscles are grown too stub-

born.

bs

u-

e-

ed

nc

er

ht

s;

at

tle

39

by

a-

nd

as

h-

ne

he

io,

ols

lat

n.

er

ies

eir

nd

for

W.

my

ito

the

10.

ad

ver

in

ive

to

for

ur,

no

The second thing is, the voice lamentable. In this qualification too, nature must have her share in producing the most consummate excellence: however, art will here, as in every other instance, go a great way with industry and application, even without the assistance of genius; especially if the student

begins young.

'There are many other instructions: but these are the most considerable. The women are taught one practice more than the men; for they are instructed in the art of crying, that is, to have their tears ready on all occasions; but this is attained very easily by most. Some indeed arrive at the utmost perfection in this art with incredible facility.

No profession requires a deeper insight into human nature, than the beggars. Their knowledge Bb 3 • of of the passions of men is so extensive, that I have often thought, it would be of no little service to a

politician to have his education among them. Nay,

there is a much greater analogy between these two

characters than is imagined: for both concur in their first and grand principle, it being equally their

business to delude and impose on mankind. It must

be confessed, that they differ widely in the degree of

advantage, which they make by their deceit; for,

whereas the beggar is contented with a little, the po-

· litician leaves but a little behind.

A very great English philosopher hath remarked our policy, in taking care never to address any one with a title inferior to what he really claims. My

father was of the same opinion: for I remember

" when I was a boy, the Pope happening to pass by,

I attended him with, Pray, Sir; for God's fake, Sir;

-for the Lord's fake, Sir ;-To which he answered gravely, Sirrah, sirrah, you ought to be whipt, for

taking the Lord's name in vain; and in vain it was

* indeed, for he gave me nothing. My father overhearing this, took his advice and whipt me very fe-

verely. While I was under correction I promised

· often never to take the Lord's name in vain any more.

My father then faid, Child, I do not whip you for

· taking his name in vain: I whip you for not calling

the Pope his Holiness.

' If all men were so wise and good to follow the · clergy's example, the nuisance of beggars would

· foon be removed. I do not remember to have been · above twice relieved by them during my whole state

of beggary. Once was by a very well looking man,

who gave me a small piece of silver, and declared;

· he had given me more than he had left himself; the

other was by a spruce young fellow, who had that

e very day first put on his robes, whom I attended

with, Pray, reverend Sir, good reverend Sir, confider your cloth. He answered, I do, child, consider

· my office, and I hope all of our cloth do the same:

· He then threw down some money, and strutted off

with great dignity.

With

· t

: f

· a

C

(C

· b

f fc

W

W

' In

· fu

· th

· fo

· to

· w

· in

WORLD TO THE NEXT, &c. 283

With the women, I had one general formulary !

Sweet pretty lady, God bless your ladyship, God

bless your handsome face. This generally succeed-

ed; but I observed, the uglier the woman was, the surer I was of success.

'It was a constant maxim among us, that the greater retinue any one travelled with, the less expectation we might promise ourselves from them; but whenever we saw a vehicle with a single, or no

fervant, we imagined our booty fure, and were fel-

dom deceived.

d

r

y ,

d

or

as

T-

le-

ed

re:

or

ng

he

ple

een

ate

an,

ed;

the

hat

led

on-

der

ne:

off

ith

We observed great difference introduced by time and circumstance in the same person; for instance, a losing gamester is sometimes generous; but from a winner, you will as easily obtain his soul, as a single groat. A lawyer travelling from his country seat to his clients at Rome, and a physician going to wisit a patient; were always worth asking: but the same on their return were (according to our cant

' phrase) untouchable.

' The most general, and indeed, the truest maxim amongst us, was, that those who possessed the least were always the readiest to give. The chief art of a beggarman is therefore to discern the rich from the poor, which, tho' it be only distinguishing subflance from shadow, is by no means attainable without a pretty good capacity, and a vast degree of attention; for these two are eternally industrious in endeavouring to counterfeit each other. In this deceit, the poor man is more heartily in earnest to deceive you, than the rich; who amidst all the emblems of poverty which he puts on, still permits fome mark of his wealth to strike the eye. Thus, while his apparel is not worth a groat, his finger wears a ring of value, or his pocket a gold watch. In a word, he seems rather to affect poverty to in-' fult, than impose on you. Now the poor man, on the contrary, is very fincere in his defire of paffing for rich; but the eagerness of this desire hurries him to over-act his part, and he betrays himself as one who is drunk by his over-acted sobriety. Thus, instead of being attended by one servant wellmounted,

mounted, he will have two; and not being able to purchase or maintain a second horse of value, one of his fervants at least is mounted on a hired rascallion. He is not contented to go plain and neat in his clothes; he therefore claps on some taudry ornament, and what he adds to the fineness of his vestment, he detracts from the fineness of his linen. Without descending into more minute particulars, I believe I may affert it as an axiom of indubitable truth, that whoever shews you he is either in himfelf, or his equipage, as gaudy as he can, convinces you he is more so than he can afford. Now whenever a man's expence exceeds his income, he is indifferent in the degree; we had therefore nothing more to do with fuch, than to flatter them with their wealth and splendor, and were always certain of fuccess.

' There is, indeed, one kind of rich man, who is commonly more liberal, namely, where riches furprize him as it were, in the midst of poverty and diffress, the consequence of which is, I own, sometimes excessive avarice, but oftener extreme prodigality. I remember one of these, who having received a pretty large fum of money, gave me, when I begged an obolus, a whole talent; on which his friend having reproved him, he answered with an oath, Why not? have I not fifty left?

The life of a beggar, if men estimated things by their real essence, and not by their outward false appearance, would be, perhaps, a more desireable fituation than any of those, which ambition per-· fuades us with fuch difficulty, danger, and often villainy, to aspire to. The wants of a beggar are commonly as chimerical as the abundance of a nobleman; for besides vanity, which a judicious beggar will always apply to with wonderful efficacy; there are in reality very few natures so hardened, as onot to compassionate poverty and distress, when the e predominancy of some other passion doth not pre-· vent them.

There is one happiness which attends money got with ease, namely, that it is never hoarded; otherwise "pountour

1.

is

15

n.

le

1-

3,

g

ir

of

r.

pl

e-

i

e-

en

is

n

by

fe

TJ

re of g

he

e-

ot

ile

as

as we have frequent opportunities of growing rich, that canker care might prey upon our quiet, as it doth on others: but our money flock we spend as fast as we acquire it; usually at least, for I speak onot without exception; thus it gives us mirth only, and no trouble. Indeed the luxury of our lives might ' introduce diseases, did not our daily exercise prevent them. This gives us an appetite and relish for our dainties, and at the same time, an antidote ' against the evil effects which sloth, united with · luxury, induces on the habit of a human body. Our women we enjoy with extasses, at least equal to what the greatest men feel in their embraces. I can, I am affured, fay of myself, that no mortal could reap imore perfect happiness from the tender passion, than my fortune had decreed me. I married a charming young woman for love, she was the daughter of a e neighbouring beggar, who with an improvidence too often feen, spent a very large income which he · procured by his profession, so that he was able to give her no fortune down; however, at his death, he left her a very well-accustomed begging-hut, situated on the side of a steep-hill, where travellers could not immediately escape from us, and a garden s adjoining, being the twenty-eighth part of an acre, well planted. She made me the best of wives, bore me nineteen children, and never failed, unless on her lying-in, which generally lasted three days, to get my supper ready, against my return home in an evening; this being my favourite meal, and at which I, as well as my whole family, greatly enjoyed ourselves; the principal subject of our discourse, being generally the boons we had that day obtained, on which occasions laughing at the folly of the donors, made no inconsiderable part of the entertainment: for whatever might be their motive for giving, we constantly imputed our success to our having flattered their vanity, or over-reached their understanding.

But, perhaps, I have dwelt too long on this character; I shall conclude therefore with telling you, that after a life of 102 years continuance, du-

ring

ring all which I had never known any fickness or infirmity, but that which old age necessarily induced,
I at last, without the least pain, went out like the

c h

· a

c ir

· d

ta

· d

e th

01

1 A

CC

P

gı

CO

th

an

to

pr

fo

fai

H

ter

tro

th

fre

gr

fer

wa

he

opi

ufi

oft

wa

fat

ho

her

bos

per

fnuff of a candle.

Minos having heard my history, bid me compute, if I could, how many lies I had told in my life. As we are here, by a certain fated necessity, obliged to confine ourselves to truth, I answered, I believed about 50,000,000. He then replied with a frown, can such a wretch conceive any hopes of entering Elysium? I immediately turned about, and upon the whole, was rejoiced at his not calling me back.

C H A P. XX.

Julian performs the part of a statesman.

IT was now my fortune to be born of a German princes; but a man-midwife pulling my head off, in delivering my mother, put a speedy end to

my princely life.

Spirits, who end their lives before they are at the age of five years, are immediately ordered into other bodies; and it was now my fortune to perform feveral infancies, before I could again entitle myself to an examination of Minos.

At length I was destined once more to play a considerable part on the stage. I was born in England, in the reign of Etheldred II. My father's name was Ulnoth. He was earl or thane of Suffex: I was afterwards known by the name of earl Goodwin, and began to make a confiderable figure in the world in the time of Harold Harefoot, whom I procured to be made king of Wessex, or the West-Saxons, in prejudice of Hardicanute, whose mother Emma endeavoured afterwards to fet another of her · fons on the throne: but I circumvented her, and communicating her defign to the king, at the same time acquainted him with a project, which I had formed for the murder of these two young princes. · Emma had fent for these her sons from Normandy, with the king's leave, whom she had deceived by

her religious sbehaviour, and pretended neglect of all worldly affairs; but I prevailed with Harold to invite these princes to his court, and put them to death. The prudent mother sent only Alfred, retaining Edward to herself, as she suspected my ill designs, and thought I should not venture to execute them on one of her sons, while she secured the other: but she was deceived, for I had no sooner Alfred in my possession, than I caused him to be conducted to Ely, where I ordered his eyes to be put out, and afterwards to be confined in a monastery.

This is one of those cruel expedients, which great men satisfy themselves well in executing, by concluding them to be necessary to the service of their prince, who is the support of their ambition.

A

0

28

0

m

lf

n-

d,

as

as

n,

he

I

A-

er

er

nd

ne

ad

es.

y,

by

S.

Edward, the other son of Emma, escaped again to Normandy; whence, after the death of Harold and Hardicanute, he made no scruple of applying to my protection and savour, though he had before prosecuted me with all the vengeance he was able, for the murder of his brother: but in all great assairs, private relation must yield to public interest. Having therefore concluded very advantageous terms for myself with him, I made no scruple of patronizing his cause, and soon placed him on the throne. Nor did I conceive the least apprehension from his resentment, as I knew my power was too great for him to encounter.

Among other stipulated conditions, one was to marry my daughter Editha. This Edward confented to with great reluctance, and I had afterwards no reason to be pleased with it: for it raised her, who had been my favourite child, to such an opinion of greatness, that instead of paying me the usual respect, she frequently threw in my teeth (as often at least as I gave her any admonition,) that the was now a queen, and that the character and title of father merged in that of subject. This behaviour, however, did not cure me of my affection towards her, nor lessen the uneasiness, which I afterwards bore on Edward's dismissing her from his bed.

One thing, which principally induced me to labour the promotion of Edward, was the simplicity or weakness of that prince, under whom I promised myself absolute dominion, under another name. Nor did this opinion deceive me; for during his whole reign, my administration was in the highest degree despotic. I had every thing of royalty, but the outward ensigns; no man ever applying for a place, or any kind of preferment, but to me only. A circumstance, which as it greatly enriched my coffers, so it no less pampered my ambition, and satisfied my vanity with a numerous attendance; and I had the pleasure of seeing those, who only bowed to the king, prostrating themselves before me.

Edward the Confessor, or St Edward, as some have called him in derision, I suppose, being a very filly fellow, had all the faults incident, and almost inseparable, to fools. He married my daughter Editha, from his fear of disobliging me; and afterwards, out of hatred to me, refuied even to confummate his marriage, though she was one of the most beautiful women of her age. He was likewise guilty of the basest ingratitude to his mother (a vice to which fools are chiefly, if not only liable) and in return for her endeavours to procure him a throne in his youth, confined her in a loathfome prison, in her old age. This, it is true, he did by my advice : but as to her walking over nine ploughshares redhot, and giving nine manors, when she had not one in her possession, there is not a syllable of veracity in it. . deated to still treat well danker had

The first great perplexity I fell into, was on the account of my son Swane, who had deflowered the abbess of Leon, since called Leominster in Herefordshire. After this fact, he retired into Denmark, whence he sent to me to obtain his pardon. The king at first resused it; being moved thereto, as I afterwards found, by some churchmen, particularly by one of his chaplains, whom I had prevented from obtaining a bishoprick. Upon this, my son Swane invaded the coasts with several ships, and

' mitted many outrageous cruelties; which, indeed, did his business, as they served me to apply to the ' fear of this king, which I had long fince discovered to be his predominant passion. And at last, he who had refused pardon to his first offence, submitted to give it him, after he had committed many other more monstrous crimes; by which his pardon lost all

grace to the offended, and received double cenfure

from all others,

0

e-

in

in

e &

d-

ne

the

the

re-

rk,

The

as I

arly

ted

fon

and

om-

' The king was greatly inclined to the Normans, had created a Norman archbishop of Canterbury, ' and had heaped extraordinary favours on him. I had no other objection to this man, than that he rose without my assistance; a cause of dislike, which in the reign of great and powerful favourites, hath often proved fatal to the persons who have given it, as the persons thus raised inspire us constantly with jealousies and apprehensions. For when we promote any one ourselves, we take effectual care to preserve such an ascendant over him, that we can at any time reduce him to his former degree, fhould he dare to act in opposition to our wills: for which reason we never suffer any one to come near the prince, but fuch as we are affured it is impossible fliould be capable of engaging or improving his affection; no prime-minister, as I apprehend, esteeming himself to be safe, while any other shares the ear of his prince, of whom we are as jealous as the fondest husband can be of his wife. Whoever, therefore, can approach him by any other channel than that of ourselves, is, in our opinion, a declared enemy, and one whom the first principles of policy oblige us to demolish with the utmost expedition. For the affection of kings is as precarious as that of women, and the only way to secure either to our-

felves, is to keep all others from them. But the archbishop did not let matters rest on sus-He foon gave open proofs of his interest with the Confessor, in procuring an office of some importance for one Rollo, a Norman of mean extraction, and very despicable parts. When I repre-

fented to the king the indecency of conferring such

an honour on fuch a fellow, he answered me, that

he was the archbishop's relation. Then, Sir, re-

* plied I, he is related to your enemy. Nothing more

· passed at that time: but I soon perceived by the arch-

bishop's behaviour, that the king had acquainted

him with our private discourse, a sufficient assurance

of his confidence in him, and neglect of me.

The favour of princes, when once lost, is recoverable only by the gaining a situation which may make you terrible to them. As I had no doubt of having lost all credit with this king, which indeed had been originally sounded and constantly supported by his fear, so I took the method of terror to re-

gain it.

The earl of Boulogne coming over to visit the king, gave me an opportunity of breaking out into open opposition: for as the earl was on his return to France, one of his fervants, who was fent before. to procure lodgings at Dover, and infifted on having them in the house of a private man in spite of the owner's teeth, was, in a fray, which enfued, killed on the spot; and the earl himself arriving there foon after, very narrowly escaped with his life. The earl, enraged at this affront, returned to the king at Gloucester, with loud complaints and demands of satisfaction. Edward consented to his demands, and ordered me to chastife the rioters, who were under my government as earl of Kent : but, instead of obeying these orders, I answered with some warmth, that the English were not used to punish people unheard; nor ought their rights and privileges to be violated: that the accused should be first fummoned; if guilty, should make satisfaction both with body and estate; but if innocent, should be discharged. Adding, with great ferocity, that, as earl of Kent, it was my duty to protect those under my government against the infults of foreigners.

This accident was extremely lucky, as it gave my quarrel with the king a popular colour; and so ingratiated me with the people, that when I set up my standard, which I soon after did, they readily and chearfully listed under my banners, and em-

· braced

braced my cause, which I persuaded them was their own: for that it was to protect them against foreigners that I had drawn my sword. The word Foreigners with an Englishman hath a kind of magical effect, they having the utmost hatred and aversion to them, arising from the cruelties they suffered from the Danes, and some other foreign nations. No wonder therefore they espoused my cause, in a quarrel which had fuch a beginning.

But what may be somewhat more remarkable is, that when I afterwards returned to England from banishment, and was at the head of an army of the Flemish, who were preparing to plunder the city of London, I still persisted that I was come to defend the English from the danger of foreigners, and gained their credit. Indeed, there is no lie so gross but "it may be imposed on the people by those whom they

esteem their patrons and defenders.

. The king saved his city by being reconciled to me, and taking again my daughter, whom he had put away from him; and thus having frightened the king into what concessions I thought proper, I dismissed my army and sleet, with which I intended, could I not have succeeded otherwise, to have sacked the city of London, and ravaged the whole country.

'I was no sooner re-established in the king's favour, or, what was as well for me, the appearance of it, than I fell violently on the archbithop. had of himself retired to his monastery in Normandy; but that did not content me, I had him formally banished, the see declared vacant, and then

filled up by another.

h

e

15

er

ro

p

ly

n.

ed

' I enjoyed my grandeur a very short time, after my restoration to it: for the king hating and fearing me to a very great degree, and finding no means of openly destroying me, at last effected his purpose by poison, and then spread abroad a ridiculous story of my wishing the next morsel might choak me, if I had had any hand in the death of Alfred; and, accordingly, that the next morfel, by a divine judg-

Cc.2

· t

·le

. C

· te

4 e

· a

• ti

· d

4 t]

· F

· ii

6 11

F H

· d

e ti

- 10

· b

e A

· y

& W

4 tl

· fi

€ e

· F

1

n

f ment, stuck in my throat, and performed that office. This of a statesman was one of my worst stages. in the other world. It is a post subjected daily to the greatest danger and inquietude, and attended with little pleasure, and less ease. In a word, it is a pill, which, was it not gilded over by ambition, would appear nauseous and detestable in the eye of every one; and perhaps that is one reason why Minos forgreatly compassionates the case of those who ' swallow it: for that just judge told me, he always acquitted a prime-minister, who could produce one fingle good action in his whole life, let him have committed ever fo many crimes. Indeed, I underflood him a little too largely, and was slepping towards the gate: but he pulled me by the fleeve, and telling me, no prime minister ever entered there, bid me go back again; faying, he thought I had fufficient reason to rejoice in escaping the bottomless pit, which half my crimes committed in any other capacity would have entitled me to.

C H A P. XXI.

Julian's adventures in the post of a soldier.

I WAS born at Caen in Normandy. My mother's name was Matilda; as for my father, I
am not so certain; for the good woman on her
death bed assured me, she herself could bring her
guess to no greater certainty, than to sive of duke
William's captains. When I was no more than thirteen (being indeed a surprising stout boy of my age)
I enlisted into the army of Duke William, afterwards known by the name of William the Conqueror; landed with him at Pevensey, or Pemsey
in Sussex, and was present at the samous battle of
Hastings.

At the first onset, it was impossible to describe my consternation, which was heightened by the fall of two soldiers who stood by me; but this soon abated, and by degrees, as my blood grew warm, I thought no more of my own safety, but fell on the

the enemy with great fury, and did a good deal of execution; till unhappily I received a wound in my thigh, which rendered me unable to stand any longer, so that I now lay among the dead, and was constantly exposed to the danger of being trampled to death, as well by my fellow soldiers as by the enemy. However, I had the fortune to escape it, and continued the remaining part of the day, and the night following, on the ground.

The next morning, the duke sending out parties to bring off the wounded, I was sound almost expiring with loss of blood; notwithstanding which, as immediate care was taken to dress my wounds, youth, and a robust constitution stood my friends, and I recovered, after a long and tedious indisposi-

tion, and was again able to use my limbs and do my

duty.

As soon as Dover was taken, I was conveyed thither with all the rest of the sick and wounded. Here I recovered of my wound: but fell afterwards into a violent flux, which, when it departed, lest me so weak, that it was long before I could regain my strength. And what most afflicted me was, that, during my whole itlness, when I languished under want as well as sickness, I had daily the mortification to see and hear the riots and excess of my fellow-soldiers, who had happily escaped safe from the battle.

'I was no sooner well, than I was ordered into garrison at Dover castle. The officers here fared very indifferently; but the private men much worse. We had great scarcity of provisions, and what was yet more intolerable, were so closely confined for want of room (sour of us being obliged to ly one the same bundle of straw) that many died, and most sickened.

Here I had remained about four months, whene one night we were alarmed with the arrival of the earl of Boulogne, who had come over privily from France, and endeavoured to surprise the castle.

The design proved inessectual: for the garrison making a brisk sally, most of his men were tum-

bled down the precipice, and he returned with a very few back to France. In this action, however,

I had the misfortune to come off with a broken arm;

it was so shattered, that besides a great deal of pain

and mifery, which I endured in my cure, I was dif-

· abled for upwards of three months.

- Soon after my recovery, I had contracted an amour with a young woman, whose parents lived near the garrison, and were in much better circum-
- fances than I had reason to expect should give their
- consent to the match. However, as she was extremely fond of me, (as I was indeed distractedly
- enamoured of her) they were prevailed on to com-
- ply with her defires, and the day was fixed for our

· marriage.

- On the evening preceding, while I was exulting with the eager expectation of the happiness I was
- the next day to enjoy, I received orders to march early in the morning towards Windsor, where a
- · large army was to be formed, at the head of which
- the king intended to march into the West. Any person who had ever been in love, may easily ima-
- gine what I felt in my mind, on receiving those or-
- ders; and what still heightened my torments was,
- that the commanding officer would not permit any one to go out of the garrison that evening; so that
- I had not even an opportunity of taking leave of my

-beloved

The morning came which was to have put me in the possession of my wishes; but alas! the scene was now changed, and all the hopes which I had raised, were now so many ghosts to haunt, and su-

ries to torment me.

It was now the midst of winter, and very severe weather for the season; when we were obliged to make very long and satiguing marches, in which we suffered all the inconveniencies of cold and hunger. The night in which I expected to riot in the arms of my beloved mistress, I was obliged to take up with a lodging on the ground, exposed to the inclemencies of a rigid frost; nor could I obtain the least comfort of sleep, which shunned me as its ene-

· my.

my. In short, the horrors of that night are not to

be described, or perhaps imagined. They made fuch an impression on my soul, that I was forced to

be dipped three times in the river Lethe, to prevent

my remembering it in the characters which I after-

wards performed in the fleth.'

y

h

a

h

1-

r.

s,

17

at

y

in

ne

ad

u-

ere

to

we

er.

ms

up

n-

he

ne-

ay.

Here I interrupted Julian for the first time, and told him, no such dipping had happened to me in my voyage from one world to the other: but he satisfied me by saying, 'That this only happened to those spirits which returned into the slesh, in order to prevent that reminiscence which Plato mentions, and which would otherwise cause great confusion in the other world.'

He then proceeded as follows: 'We continued a very laborious march to Exeter, which we were ordered to besiege. The town soon surrendered, and his majesty built a castle there which he garrisoned with his Normans, and unhappily I had the missor-

tune to be one of the number.

Here we were confined closer than I had been at Dover; for as the citizens were extremely disaffected, we were never suffered to go without the walls of the castle; nor indeed could we, unless in large bodies, without the utmost danger. We were likewise kept to continual duty, nor could any solicitations prevail with the commanding officer to give me a month's absence to visit my love, from whom I had no opportunity of hearing in all my long absence.

However in the spring, the people being more quiet, and another officer of a gentler temper succeeding to the principal command, I obtained leave to go to Dover: but alas! what comfort did my long journey bring me? I found the parents of my darling in the utmost misery at her loss: for she had died about a week before my arrival of a consumption, which they imputed to her pining at my sudden departure.

I now fell into the most violent and almost raving fit of despair. I cursed myself, the king, and
the whole world, which no longer seemed to have any
de-

delight for me. I threw myself on the grave of my deceased love, and lay there without any kind of sustenance for two whole days. At last hunger, together with the persuasions of some people who took pity on me, prevailed with me to quit that situation, and refresh myself with food. They then persuaded me to return to my post, and abandon a place where almost every object I saw, recalled ideas to my mind, which, as they said, I should endeavour with my utmost sorce to expel from it. This advice at length succeeded; the rather, as the father and mother of my beloved, resused to see me, looking upon me as the innocent but certain cause of the death of their only child.

The loss of one we tenderly love, as it is one of the most bitter and biting evils which attends human life, so it wants the lenitive which palliates and softens every other calamity; I mean, that great reliever, hope. No man can be so totally undone, but that he may still cherish expectation: but this deprives us of all such comfort, nor can any thing but time alone lessen it. This however, in most minds, is sure to work a slow but effectual remedy; so did it in mine: for within a twelvemonth, I was entirely reconciled to my fortune, and soon after absolutely forgot the object of a passion from which I had promised myself such extreme happiness, and in the disappointment of which I had experienced.

fuch inconceivable mifery.

At the expiration of the month, I returned to my garrison at Exeter; where I was no sooner arrived, than I was ordered to march into the north, to oppose a force there levied by the earls of Chester and Northumberland. We came to York, where his majesty pardoned the heads of the rebels, and very severely punished some who were less guilty. It was particularly my, lot to be ordered to seize a poor man, who had never been out of his house, and convey him to prison. I detested this barbarity, yet was obliged to execute it; nay, though no reward would have bribed me in a private capacity to have acted such a part yet, so much fancity is there

C

c tl

P

W

to

h

ag

th

T

an

in the commands of a monarch, or general, to a foldier, that I performed it without reluctance, nor had the tears of his wife and family any prevalence

with me. But this, which was a very small piece of mischief in comparison with many of my barbarities afterwards, was however the only one which ever gave me any uneafiness for when the king led us ' afterward into Northumberland to revenge those people's having joined with Osborne the Dane in his invasion, and orders were given us to commit what ravages we could, I was forward in fulfilling. them, and among some leffer cruelties (I remember it yet with forrow) I ravished a woman, murdered a ' little infant playing in her lap, and then burnt her house. In short, for I have no pleasure in this part of my relation, I had my share in all the cruelties exercifed on those poor wretches; which were for grievous, that for fixty miles together, between York and Durham, not a fingle house, church, or any other public or private edifice was left standing. We had pretty well devoured the country, when we were ordered to march to the isle of Ely, to oppose Hereward, a bold and stout soldier, who had under him a very large body of rebels, who had the impudence to rife against their king and conqueror (I talk now in the same style I did then) in defence of their liberties, as they called them. These were soon subdued: but as I happened (more to my glory than my comfort) to be posted in that part through which Hereward cut his way, I re-

I languished a long time with these wounds, which made me incapable of attending the king into Scotland. However, I was able to go over with him afterwards into Normandy, in his expedition against Philip, who had taken the opportunity of the troubles in England, to invade that province. Those few Normans who had survived their wounds, and had remained in the isse of Ely, were all of our

ceived a dreadful cut on the forehead, a fecond on

the shoulder, and was run through the body with a

P

e

d

1.

a

7.

0

re

in

- na-

nation who went, the rest of his army being all composed of English. In a skirmish near the town of Mans, my leg was broke, and so shattered, that

it was forced to be cut off.

I was now disabled from serving longer in the army, and accordingly being discharged from the service, I retired to the place of my nativity, where in extreme poverty, and frequent bad health from the many wounds I had received, I dragged on a miserable life to the age of sixty-three; my only pleasure being to recount the seats of my youth, in which narratives I generally exceeded the truth.

'It would be tedious and unpleasant to recount to you the several miseries I suffered after my return to Caen; let it suffice, they were so terrible, that they induced Minos to compassionate me, and, notwithstanding the barbarities I had been guilty of in Northumberland, to suffer me to go once more back to earth.'

C H A P. XXII.

What bappened to Julian in the person of a taylor.

ORTUNE now stationed me in a character, I which the ingratitude of mankind hath put them on ridiculing, though they owe to it not only a relief from the inclemencies of cold, to which they would otherwise be exposed, but likewise a considerable satisfaction of their vanity. The character I mean, was that of a taylor; which, if we consider it with due attention, must be confessed to have in it great dignity and importance. For in reality, who constitutes the different degrees between men, but the taylor? The prince indeed gives the title, but it is the taylor who makes the man. To his labours are owing the respect of crouds, and the awe which great men inspire into their beholders, though these are too often unjustly attributed to other mo-Lastly, the admiration of the fair is most tives. commonly to be placed to his account.

· li

b

0

TE

th

aı

to

fa

It

pi

'I was just set up in my trade, when I made three fuits of fine cloaths for king Stephen's coronation.

'I que-

I question whether the person who wears the rich coat, hath so much pleasure and vanity in being admired in it, as we taylors have from that admiration; and perhaps a philosopher would say, he is not so well entitled to it. I bustled on the day of the ceremony through the croud, and it was with incredible delight, I heard several say, as my clothes walked by, bless me, was ever any thing so fine as the Earl of Devonshire! Sure he and Sir Hugh Bigot are the two best dressed men I ever saw. Now both these suits were of my making.

There would indeed be infinite pleasure in working for the courtiers, as they are generally genteel men, and shew one's clothes to the best advantage, was it not for one small discouragement; this is, that they never pay. I solemnly protest, tho' I lost almost as much by the court in my life as I got by the city, I never carried a suit into the latter with half the satisfaction which I have done to the former; though from that I was certain of ready money, and from this almost as certain of no money at all.

' Courtiers may, however, be divided into two forts, very effentially different from each other; into those who never intend to pay for their elothes; and those who' do intend to pay for them, but never happen to be able. Of the latter fort, are many of those young gentlemen whom we equip out for the army, and who are, unhappily for us, cut off before they arrive at preferment. This is the reafon that taylors in time of war are mistaken for po-' liticians, by their inquisitiveness into the event of battles; one campaign very often proving the ruin of half a dozen of us. I am sure I had frequent reason to curse that fatal battle of Cardigan, where the Welsh defeated some of king Stephen's best troops, and where many a good fuit of mine, unpaid for, fell to the ground.

y

y i-

er

i-

ve.

y,

n,

le,

nis

we

gh

10-

oft

ree

on.

ue-

'The gentlemen of this honourable calling have fared much better in later ages than when I was of it: for now it seems the fashion is, when they apprehend their customer is not in the best circum-

· Stances,

stances, if they are not paid as soon as they carry home the fuit, they charge him in their book as much again as it is worth, and then fend a gentleman with a small scrip of parchment to demand the money. If this be not immediately paid, the gentleman takes the beau with him to his house, where he locks him up till the taylor is contented: but in

my time, these scrips of parchment were not in use; and if the beau dilliked paying for his clothes, as very often happened, we had no method of compel-· ling him. ' In several of the characters which I have related. to you, I apprehend, I have sometimes forgot my-· felf, and considered myself as really interested, as I was when I personated them on earth. I have just now caught myself in the fact : for I have complained to you as bitterly of my customers as I formerly used to do, when I was the taylor: but in reality, tho' there were some few persons of very great quality, and some others who never paid their debts; yet those were but a few, and I had a method of repairing this loss. My customers I divided under three heads: those who paid ready money, those who paid slow, and those who never paid at all. The first of these, I considered apart by themselves, as persons by whom I got a certain but small . profit. The two last I lumped together, making those who paid flow, contribute to repair my losses by those who did not pay at all. Thus upon the whole I was a very inconfiderable lofer, and might have left a fortune to my family, had I not launched forth into expences which swallowed up all my gains. I had a wife and two children. These indeed I kept frugally enough; for I half starved them: but I kept a mistress in a finer way, for whom I had a country house, pleasantly situated on the Thames, elegantly fitted up, and neatly fur-

. 1

6 a

· P

· ti

·I

· a

· n

'nished. This woman might very properly be called ' my mistress; for the was most absolutely so, and

though her tenor was no higher than by my will, · she domineered as tyrannically as if my chains had

been rivetted in the strongest manner. To all this I · fubfubmitted, not through any adoration of her beauty, which was indeed but indifferent; her charms confifted in little wantonnesses, which she knew admirably well to use in hours of dalliance, and which, I believe, are of all things the most delightful to a lover.

' She was fo profulely extravagant, that it feemed as if the had an actual intent to ruin me. This I am fure of, if such had been her real intention, she could have taken no properer way to accomplish it; nay, I myself might appear to have had the same view; for besides this extravagant mistress, and my country house, I kept likewise a brace of hunters, rather for that it was fashionable so to do, than for any great delight I took in the sport, which I very ' little attended; not for want of leisure, for few noblemen had fo much; all the work I ever did was taking measure, and that only of my greatest and best customers. I scarce ever cut a piece of cloth in my life, nor was indeed much more able to fashion a coat than any gentleman in the kingdom. This made a skilful servant too necessary to me. · He knew I must submit to any terms with, or any treatment from him. He knew it was easier for him to find another fuch a taylor as me, than for me to procure such another workman as him: for this reason, he exerted the most notorious and cruel tyranny, seldom giving me a civil word; ' nor could the utmost condescension on my side, tho' attended with continual presents and rewards, and raising his wages, content or please him. In a word, he was as absolutely my master, as was ever an am-' bitious, industrious prime-minister over an indolent ' and voluptuous king. All my other journeymen ' paid more respect to him than to me; for they con-' fidered my favour as a necessary consequence of obtaining his.

'I acted this part. Minos hesitated a sew moments, and then bid me get back again, without assigning a-

" ny reason.'

It

n-

r-

e-

at

eir

e-

ed

ey,

at

m-

all

ing

ffes

the

ght

ch-

my

in-

ved

for

lon

fur-

alled

and

will,

had

his I

fub-

C H A P. XXIII.

The life of Alderman Julian. NOW revisited England, and was born at London. My father was one of the magistrates of that city. He had eleven children, of whom I was the eldest. He had great success in trade, and grew extremely rich; but the largeness of his family rendered it impossible for him to leave me a fortune sufficient to live well on, independent of business. was accordingly brought up to be a fishmonger; in which capacity, I myself afterwards acquired very confiderable wealth. The same disposition of mind, which in princes is called ambition, is in subjects named faction. To this temper I was greatly addicted from my youth. I was, while a boy, a great partizan of prince John against his brother Richard, during the latter's abfence in the holy war, and in his captivity. I was ono more than one, and twenty when I first began to make political speeches in public, and to endea-

vour to foment disquietude and discontent in the city. As I was pretty well qualified for this office,

by a great fluency of words, an harmonious accent, a graceful delivery, and above all, an invincible af-

furance, I foon acquired some reputation among the younger citizens, and some of the weaker and more inconsiderate of a riper age. This co-operating

with my own natural vanity, made me extravagantly proud and supercilious. I soon began to esteem

myself a man of some consequence, and to overlook

* persons every way my superiors.

The famous Robin Hood, and his companion Little John, at this time made a confiderable figure in Yorkshire. I took upon me to write a letter to the former, in the name of the city, inviting him to come to London, where I assured him of very good reception, signifying to him my own great weight and consequence, and how much I had differed the citizens in his favour. Whether he re-

· ceived

ceived this letter or no, I am not certain: but he

f never gave me any aniwer to it. ' A little afterwards, one William Fitz-Osborn, or as he was nicknamed, William Long-Beard, began to make a figure in the city. He was a bold and an impudent fellow, and had raifed himself to great popularity with the rabble, by pretending to espouse their cause against the rich. I took this man's part, and made a public oration in his favour, fetting him forth as a patriot, and one who had embarked in the cause of liberty: for which service he did not receive me with the acknowledgments [expected. However, as I thought I should easily gain the ascendant over this sellow, I continued till firm on his side, till the archbishop of Canterbury, with an armed force, put an end to his progress; for he was seized in Bow-church, where he had taken refuge, and with nine of his accomplices · hanged in chains.

at

es

be

ly

ne

in

ry

ces

Го

th.

hn

ab-

was

to

ea.

the

ice,

ent,

af-

ong

and

ting

eem

look

nion

gure

er to

him

very

great

dif-

e re-

eived

'I escaped narrowly myself: for I was seized in the same church with the rest, and as I had been very considerably engaged in the enterprize, the archbishop was inclined to make me an example: but my father's merit, who had advanced a considerable sum to queen Eleanor, towards the king's ransom, preserved me.

'The consternation my danger had occasioned, kept me some time quiet, and I applied myself very assiduously to my trade. I invented all manner of methods to enhance the price of sish, and made use of my utmost endeavours to engross as much of the business as possible in my own hands. By these means I acquired a substance, which raised me to some little consequence in the city; but far from elevating me to that degree, which I had formerly slattered myself with possessing, at a time when I was totally insignificant: for in a trading society, money must at least lay the foundation of all power and interest.

But as it hath been remarked, that the same ambition which sent Alexander into Asia, brings the wrestler on the green; and as this same ambition is Dd 2 as incapable as quickfilver of lying still; so I, who was possessed, perhaps, of a share equal to what hath fired the blood of any of the heroes of antiquity, was no less restless, and discontented with ease and quiet. My first endeavours were to make myself head of my company, which Richard I. had just published, and soon afterwards I procured my-

felf to be chosen alderman.

'Opposition is the only state, which can give a subject an opportunity of exerting the disposition I was possessed of. Accordingly king John was no fooner seated on his throne, than I began to oppose · his measures, whether right or wrong. It is true, that monarch had faults enow. He was so abandoned to luft and luxury, that he addicted himself to the most extravagant excesses in both, while he indolently suffered the king of France to rob him of almost all his foreign dominions: my opposition therefore was justifiable enough, and if my motive from within had been as good as the occasion from without, I should have had little to excuse; but in truth, I fought nothing but my own preferment, by making myself formidable to the king, and then felling to him the interest of that party, by whose means I had become so. Indeed, had the public good been my care, however zealously I might have opposed the beginning of his reign, I should have onot scrupled to lend him my utmost assistance in the ftruggle between him and pope Innocent the third, in which he was so manifestly in the right: nor have fuffered the insolence of that pope, and the power of the king of France, to have compelled him in the issue basely to resign his crown into the hands of the former, and receive it again as a vassal; by ' means of which acknowledgment the pope afterwards claimed this kingdom as a tributary fief to be held of the papal chair. A claim which occasioned great uneafiness to many subsequent princes, and brought numberless calamities on the nation.

As the king had among other concessions stipulated to pay an immediate sum of money to Pandulph, which he had great difficulty to raise, it was absoabsolutely necessary for him to apply to the city, where my interest and popularity were so high, that he had no hopes without my assistance. As I knew this, I

took care to fell myself and country as high as pof-

fible. The terms I demanded, therefore, were a place,

a pension, and a knighthood. All those were imme-

diately consented to. I was forthwith knighted, and

promited the other two.

'I now mounted the hustings, and without any regard to decency or modelty, made as emphatical a speech in favour of the king, as before I had done against him. In this speech I justified all those measures which I had before condemned, and pleaded as earnestly with my fellow-citizens, to open their purses, as I had formerly done to prevail with them to keep them shut. But, alas! my rhetoric had not the effect I proposed. The consequence of my arguments was only contempt to myfelf. The people at first stared at one another, and afterwards began unanimously to express their dislike. An impudent fellow among them reflecting on my trade, cried out, Stinking Fish! which was immediately reiterated through the whole croud. I was then forced to flink away home, but I was not able to accomplish my retreat without being attended by the mob, who huzza'd me along the street with the repeated cries of Stinking Fish !

of my faithful fervice, and how much I had suffered in his cause. I sound by my first reception, he had already heard of my success. Instead of thanking me for my speech, he said, the city should repent of their obstinacy; for that he would shew them who he was: and so saying, he immediately turned that part to me, to which the toe of man hath so wonderful an affection, that it is very difficult, whenever it presents itself conveniently, to keep our toes from the most violent and ardent salutation.

of it.

C

e

n

s

y

s

t

t

'I was a little nettled at this behaviour, and with fome earneitness claimed the king's fulfilling his promite: but he retired without answering meaning Dd 2

I then applied to some of the courtiers, who had

· lately professed great friendship to me, had ate at

my house, and invited me to theirs: but not one

would return me any answer, all running away from

me, as if I had been feized with some contagious diftemper. I now found by experience, that as none

can be fo civil, fo none can be ruder than a cour-

tier.

A few moments after the king's retiring, I was e left alone in the room, to confider what I should

do, or whither I should turn myself. My reception

in the city promised itself to be equal at least with what I found at court. However, there was my

home, and thither it was necessary I should retreat

for the present.

· But, indeed, bad as I apprehended my treatment in the city would be, it exceeded my expecta-

" tion. I rode home on an ambling pad through crouds, who expressed every kind of disregard and

contempt; pelting me not only with the most abu-

five language, but with dirt. However, with much

difficulty, I arrived at last at my own house, with my

bones whole, but covered over with filth.

When I was got within my doors, and had shut them against the mob, who had pretty well vented

their spleen, and seemed now contented to retire;

my wife, whom I found crying over her children, and from whom I hoped fome comfort in my afflic-

tions, fell upon me in the most outrageous manner.

. She asked me, why I would venture on such a step,

without consulting her; she said, her advice might · have been civilly asked, if I was resolved not to

have been guided by it. That whatever opinion I

might have conceived of her understanding, the rest

of the world thought better of it. That I had never failed, when I had asked her counsel, nor ever

succeeded without it; with much more of the same

· kind, too tedious to mention; concluding, that it was a monstrous behaviour to desert my party, and

come over to the court. An abuse which I took

worse than all the rest, as she had been constantly

for several years assiduous in railing at the opposition, tion, in siding with the court-party, and begging me to come over to it. And especially after my mentioning the offer of knighthood to her, since which time she had continually interrupted my repose, with dinning in my ears the folly of resusing honours, and of adhering to a party, and to principles, by which I was certain of procuring no ad-

' vantage to myself and my family."

I had now entirely lost my trade, so that I had not the least temptation to stay longer in a city where I was certain of receiving daily affronts and rebukes. I therefore made up my affairs with the utmost expedition, and scraping together all I could, retired into the country; where I spent the remainder of my days, in universal contempt, being shunned by every body, perpetually abused by my wife, and not much respected by my children.

'Minos told me, though I had been a very vile fellow, he thought my sufferings made some atone-

ment, and so bid me take the other trial.'

C H A P. XXIV.

Julian recounts what happened to him while he was

ROME was now the seat of my nativity, where I was born of a family more remarkable for honour than riches. I was intended for the church, and had a pretty good education; but my father dying while I was young, and leaving me nothing, for he had wasted his whole patrimony, I was forced to enter myself into the order of mendicants.

'When I was at school, I had a knack of rhiming, which I unhappily mistook for genius, and indulged to my cost: for my verses drew on me only ridicule, and I was in contempt called, The

· Poet.

h

d

1-

h

y

ut

ed

e ;

n,

C-

er.

p,

ht

to

a I

elt

ne-

ver

me

it

nd

ok

tly

ofi-

,תנ

'This humour pursued me through my life. My first composition after I lest school, was a panegyric on pope Alexander IV. who then pretended a project of dethroning the king of Sicily. On this subject I composed a poem of about fifteen thousand lines,

lines, which with much difficulty I got to be prefented to his holiness, of whom I expected great e preferment as my reward: but I was cruelly disappointed; for when I had waited a year, without hearing any of the commendations I had flattered myself with receiving, and being now able to contain no longer, I applied to a Jesuit who was my relation, and had the pope's ear, to know what his holiness's opinion was of my work; he coldly an-· swered me, that he was at that time busied in cone cerns of too much importance, to attend the reading

of poems.

'However dissatisfied I might be, and really was, with this reception; and however angry I was with the pope, for whose understanding I entertained an immoderate contempt, I was not yet discouraged from a second attempt. Accordingly, I soon after produced another work, entitled, The Trojan · Horse. This was an allegorical work, in which the church was introduced into the world, in the fame manner as that machine had been into Troy. · The priests were the foldiers in its belly, and the · heathen superstition the city to be destroyed by them. This poem was written in Latin. I remember some of the lines:

Mundanos Scandit fatalis machina muros,

· Farta sacerdotum turmis: exinde per alvum · Visi exiri omnes, magno cum murmure olentes.

Non aliter quam cum humanis furibundus ab antris

It sonus, & nares simul aura invadit biantes.

· Mille scatent et mille alit; trepidare timore

Ethnica gens capit : falsi per inane volantes

Effugere Dei desertaque templa relinquunt. Jam magnum crepitavit equus, mox orbis & alti

Ingemuere poli: tunc tu pater, ultimus omnium

· Maxime Alexander, ventrem maturus equinum

· Deseris, heu proles meliori digne parente.'

I believe Julian, had I not stopt him, would have gone through the whole poem (for, as I observed, in most of the characters he related, the affections he had enjoyed while he personated them on earth, still made

fome

Some impression on him;) but I begged him to omit the sequel of the poem, and proceed with his history. He then recollected himself, and smiling at the observation which by intuition he perceived I had made, continued his narration as follows:

'I confess to you, says he, that the delight in repeating our own works is so predominant in a poet,
that I find nothing can totally root it out of the
foul. Happy would it be for those persons, if their
hearers could be delighted in the same manner:
but alas! hence that ingens solitude complained of
by Horace: for the vanity of mankind is so much
greedier and more general than their avarice, that
no beggar is so ill received by them as he who solicits their praise.

'This I sufficiently experienced in the character of a poet: for my company was shunned (I believe on this account chiefly) by my whole house; nay, there were sew who would submit to hearing me read my poetry, even at the price of sharing in my provisions. The only person who gave me audience was a brother poet; he indeed sed me with commendation very liberally; but as I was forced to hear and commend in my turn, I perhaps bought his attention dear enough.

r

n

e

e

0.

1e

ve

ad

de

me

Well, Sir, if my expectations of the reward I hoped from my first poem had baulked me, I had I now still greater reason to complain; for instead of being preferred or commended for the second, I was enjoined a very severe penance by my superior, for ludicrously comparing the pope to a fart. My poetry was now the jest of every company, except some few, who spoke of it with detestation; and I found; that instead of recommending me to preferment, it had effectually barred me from all probability of attaining it.

'These discouragements had now induced me to lay down my pen, and write no more. But, as Ju'venal says,

^{——} Si discedas, Laqueo tenet ambitiosi Consuetudo mali.

I was an example of the truth of this affertion: for I foon betook myself again to my muse. Indeed, a poet hath the same happiness with a man who is dotingly fond of an ugly woman. The one enjoys his muse, and the other his mistress, with a pleasure very little abated by the esteem of the world, and only undervalues their taste for not corresponding with his own.

they had all the same fate; and though in reality some of my latter pieces deserved (I may now speak it without the imputation of vanity) a better success, as I had the character of a bad writer, I found it impossible ever to obtain the reputation of a good one. Had I possessed the merit of Homer, I could have hoped for no applause; since it must have been a prosound secret: for no one would now

read a syllable of my writings.

The poets of my age were, as I believe you know, not very famous. However, there was one in some credit at that time, though I have the consolation to know his works are all perished long ago. The malice, envy, and hatred I bore this man are inconceivable to any but an author, and an unsuccessful one; I never could bear to hear him well spoken of, and writ anonymous satires against him, though I had received obligations from him; indeed I believe it would have been an absolute impossibility for him at any rate to have made me sincerely his friend.

I have heard an observation which was made by some one of latter days, that there are no worse men than bad authors. A remark of the same kind hath been made on ugly women, and the truth of both stands on one and the same reason, viz. that they are both tainted with that cursed and detestable vice of envy; which, as it is the greatest torment to the mind it inhabits, so is it capable of introducing into it a total corruption, and of inspiring it to the commission of the most horrid crimes imaginable.

'My life was but short; for I soon pined myself to death with the vice I just now mentioned. Minos told me I was infinitely too bad for Elyfium; and as for the other place, the devil had fworn he would never entertain a poet for Orpheus's fake: fo I was forced to return again to the place from whence I came.'

C H A P. XXV.

Julian performs the part of a knight and a dancing. master.

I NOW mounted the stage in Sicily, and became a knight templar: but as my adventures differ ' fo little from those I have recounted you in the character of a common soldier, I shall not tire you with repetition. The soldier and the captain differ ' in reality so little from one another, that it requires an accurate judgment to distinguish them; the latter wears finer cloaths, and in times of success lives fomewhat more delicately: but as to every thing else, they very nearly resembled one another.

' My next step was into France, where fortune affigned me the part of a dancing master. I was so expert in my profession, that I was brought to court in my youth, and had the heels of Philip de Valois, who afterwards succeeded Charles the Fair, com-

mitted to my direction.

y

dof

tt.

y

'I do not remember, that in any of the characters in which I appeared on earth, I ever assumed to myself a greater dignity, or thought myself of more real importance than now. I looked on dancing as the greatest excellence of human nature, and on myfelf as the greatest proficient in it. And indeed, this seemed to be the general opinion of the whole court: for I was the chief instructor of the youth of both sexes, whose merit was almost entirely defined by the advances they made in that science which I had the honour to profess. As to myself, I was so fully persuaded of this truth, that I not only slighted and despised those who were ignorant of dancing, but I thought the highest character I could give of

any man, was, that he made a graceful bow: for want of which accomplishments, I had a sovereign contempt for many persons of learning; nay, for

some officers in the army, and a few even of the

courtiers themselves.

'Though so little of my youth had been thrown away in what they call literature, that I could hardly write and read, yet I composed a treatise on educa-' tion; the first rudiments of which as I, taught, were to instruct a child in the science of coming handsomely into a room. In this I corrected many faults of my predecessors, particularly that of being too much in a hurry, and instituting a child in the fublimer parts of dancing before they are capable

f of making their honours.

But as I have not now the same high opinion of my profession, which I had then, I shall not entertain you with a long history of a life which confisted of borées and coupées. Let it suffice, that I lived to a very old age, and followed my business as long as I could crawl. At length I revisited my old friend Minos, who treated me with very little respect, and bad me dance back again to earth.

· I did so, and was now once more born an Eng-! lishman, bred up to the church, and at length ar-

rived to the station of a bishop.

· Nothing was so remarkable in this character, as my always voting-*.

* Here part of the manuscript is lost, and that a very considerable one, as appears by the number of the next book and chapter, which contains, I find, the history of Anna Boleyn: but as to the manner in which it was introduced, or to whom the narrative is told, we are totally left in the dark. I have only to remark, that this chapter is in the original writ in a woman's hand: and though the observations in it are, I think, as excellent as any in the whole volume, there feems to be a difference in stile between this and the preceeding chapters; and as it is the character of a woman which is related, I am inclined to fancy it was really written by one of that fex.

Lines, I am a man

B O O K XIX.

C H A P. VII.

Wherein Anna Boleyn relates the history of her life.

I AM going now truly to recount a life, which, from the time of its ceasing, has been in the other world, the continual subject of the cavils of contending parties; the one making me as black as hell, the other as pure and innocent as the inhabitants of this blessed place; the mist of prejudice blinding their eyes, and zeal for what they themselves profess, making every thing appear in that light which they think most conduces to its homour.

' My infancy was spent in my father's house, in those childish plays, which are most suitable to that fate, and I think this was one of the happiest parts of my life; for my parents were not among the number of those who look upon their children as so many objects of a tyrannic power, but I was regarded as the dear pledge of a virtuous love, and ' all my little pleasures were thought from their indulgence their greatest delight. At seven years old, I was carried into France with the king's fifter, who was married to the French king, where I lived with a person of quality, who was an acquaintance of my father's. I fpent my time in learning those things necessary to give young persons of fashion a polite education, and did neither good nor evil, but day passed after day in the same easy way, till I was fourteen; then began my anxiety, my vanity grew strong, and my heart fluttered with joy at every compliment paid to my beauty: and as the lady, with whom I lived, was of a gay chearful disposition, The kept a great deal of company, and my

S

m

1-

1-

ce

ne

cy

' youth and charms made me the continual object of their admiration. I passed some little time in those exulting raptures, which are felt by every woman, perfectly fatisfied with herself, and with the behaviour of others towards her. I was, when very young, promoted to be maid of honour to her mae jesty. The court was frequented by a young nobleman whose beauty was the chief subject of conversation in all assemblies of ladies. The delicacy of his person, added to a great softness in his mane ner, gave every thing he said and did such an air of tenderness, that every woman he spoke to, flattered · herself with being the object of his love. I was one of those who was vain enough of my own charms to hope to make a conquest of him, whom the whole court fighed for: I now thought every other object below my notice; yet the only pleasure I proposed to myself in this design was, the triumphing over that heart, which I plainly faw all the ladies of the highest quality, and the greatest beauty, would have been proud of possessing. I was yet too young to be very artful; but Nature, without any affistance, foon discovers to a man, who is used to f gallantry, a woman's defire to be liked by him, whether that defire arises from any particular choice s she makes of him, or only from vanity. He soon * perceived my thoughts, and gratified my utmost wishes, by constantly preferring me before all other women, and exerting his utmost gallantry and ad-* dress to engage my affections. This sudden happie ness, which I then thought the greatest I could have had, appeared visible in all my actions; I grew so gay, and so full of vivacity, that it made my perfon appear still to a better advantage, all my ac-· quaintance pretending to be fonder of me than ever; though, young as I was, I plainly faw it was but pretence, for through all their endeavours to the contrary, envy would often break forth in fly infinuations, and malicious sneers, which gave me fresh matter of triumph, and frequent opportunities of insulting them; which I never let slip, for now first · my

of

fe

n,

a-

·y

a-

0-

n-

cy

n-

of

ed

as

ns

he

er

0-

ng

ies

ty,

00

ny

to

m,

ice

on

oft

her

ad-

pi-

ave

fo

er-

ac-

nan

but

the

nfi-

esh

of

first

my

my female heart grew sensible of the spiteful plea-' fure of seeing another languish for what I enjoy'd. · Whilst I was in the height of my happiness, her majesty fell ill of a languishing distemper, which obliged her to go into the country for the change of air; my place made it necessary for me to attend her, and which way he brought it about, I can't ' imagine, but my young hero found means to be one . of that small train that waited on my royal mifress, although the went as private as possible. Hitherto all the interviews I had ever had with him were in public, and I only looked on him as the fitter object to feed that pride which had no other view but to shew its power; but now the scene was quite changed. My rivals were all at a distance: the place we went to, was as charming as the most agreeable natural fituation, affifted by the greatest art, could make it; the pleasant solitary walks, the finging of birds, the thou and pretty romantie · scenes this delightful place afforded, gave a sudden turn to my mind, my whole foul was melted into foftness, and all my vanity was fled. My spark was too much used to affairs of this nature, not to perceive this change; at first the prosuse transports of his joy made me believe him, wholly mine, and this belief gave me fuch happiness, that no language f affords words to express it, and can be only known to those who have felt it. But this was of a very short duration, for I soon found I had to do with one of those men, whose only end in the pursuit of a woman, is to make her fall a victim to an infatiable defire to be admired. His defigns had fucceeded, and now he every day grew colder, and, as if by infatuation, my passion every day increased; and notwithstanding all my resolutions and endeavours to the contrary, my rage at the disappointment at once both of my love and pride, and at the finding a passion fixed in my breast, I knew not how to conquer, broke out into that inconsistent behaviour, which must always be the consequence of vio-Lent passions: one moment I reproached him, the Ee 2 e next

next I grew to tenderness, and blamed myself, and thought I fancied, what was not true, he faw my struggle, and triumphed in it: but as he had not witnesses enough there of his victory, to give him the full enjoyment of it, he grew weary of the country, and returned to Paris, and left me in a condition it is utterly impossible to describe. My mind was like a city up in arms, all confusion; and every new thought was a fresh disturber of my peace. Sleep quite forfook me, and the anxiety I suffered threw me into a fever, which had like to have cost me my life. With great care I recovered; but the violence of the distemper left such a weakness on my body, that the disturbance of my mind was greatly affuaged; and now I began to comfort myfelf in the reflection, that this gentleman's being a finished coquet, was very likely the only thing that could have preserved me: for he was the only man from whom I was ever in any danger. By that time I was got tolerably well, we returned to Paris; and I confess, I both wished and feared to see this cause of all my pain; however, I hoped by the help of my refentment, to be able to meet him with indifference. This employed my thoughts till our arrival. The next day, there was a very full court to congratulate the queen on her recovery; and, amongst the rest, my love appeared dressed and adorned, as if he designed some new conquest. Instead of seeing a woman he despised and slighted, he approached me with that affured air which is common to successful coxcombs. At the same time, · I perceived I was furrounded by all those ladies who were on his account my greatest enemies; and in revenge, wished for nothing more than to see me make a ridiculous figure. This fituation fo perplexed my thoughts, that when he came near enough to speak to me, I fainted away in his arms. ' (Had I studied which way I could gratify him most, it was impossible to have done any thing to have pleased him more.) Some that stood by, brought · smelling-bottles, and used means for my recovery;

and I was welcomed to returning life, by all those ill-natured repartees, which women enraged by envy are capable of venting. One cried, Well, I never thought my Lord had any thing so frightful in his person, or so fierce in his manner, as to strike a young lady dead at the fight of him. No, no, fays another, some ladies senses are more apt to be hurried by agreeable than disagreeable objects: With many more such fort of speeches, which shewed more malice than wit. This not being able to bear, trembling, and with but just strength enough to move, I crawled to my coach and hurried home. When I was alone, and thought on what had happened to me in a public court, I was at first driven to the utmost despair; but afterwards, when I came to reflect, I believe this accident contributed more to my being cured of my passion, than any other could have done. I began to think the only method to pique the man, who had used me so barbarously, and to be revenged on my spightful rivals, was to recover that beauty, which was then languid, and had lost its lustre, to let them see I had still charms enough to engage as many lovers as I could defire, and that I could yet rival them, who had thus cruelly infulted me. These pleasing hopes revived my sinking spirits, and worked a more effectual cure on me, than all the philosophy and advice of the wifest men could have done. I now employed all my time and care in adorning my person, and studying the surest means of engaging the affections of others, while I myself continued quite indifferent; for I resolved for the future, if ever one soft thought made its way to my heart, to fly the object of it, and by new lovers to drive the image from my breaft. I consulted my glass every morning, and got fuch a command of my countenance, that I could fuit it to the different tastes of variety of lovers; and though I was young, for I was not above feventeen, yet my public way of life gave me such continual opportunities of conversing with men, and the strong defire I now had of pleasing them, Ee 3 · led

led me to make such constant observations on every thing they faid or did, that I foon found out the different methods of dealing with them. I observed that most men generally liked in women what was most opposite to their own characters; therefore, to the grave folid man of sense, I endeavoured to appear sprightly, and full of spirit; to the witty and gay, foft and languishing; to the amorous, (for they want no increase of their passions) cold and referved; to the fearful and backward, warm and full of fire, and so of all the rest. As to beaus and all those fort of men whose desires are centered in the satisfaction of their vanity, I had learned by fad experience, the only way to deal with them was to laugh at them, and let their own good opinion of themselves be the only support of their hopes. I knew, while I could get other followers, I was fure of them; for the only fign of modesty they ever give, is that of not depending on their own judgments, but following the opinions of the greatest number. Thus furnished with maxims, and grown wife by past errors, I in a manner began the world again: I appeared in all public places handsomer and more lively than ever, to the amazement of every one who faw me, and had heard of the affair between me and my Lord. He himself was much furprised, and vexed at this sudden change, nor could he account how it was possible for me so soon to shake off those chains he thought he had fixed on me for life, nor was he willing to lose his conquest in this manner. He endeavoured by all means possible to talk to me again of love, but I stood fixed to my refolution, (in which I was greatly affifted by the croud of admirers that daily furrounded me) never to let him explain himself: for notwithstanding all my pride, I found the first impression the heart receives of love is so strong, that it requires the most vigilant care to prevent a relapse. Now I lived three years in a constant round of diversions, and was made the perfect idol of all the men that came to court of all ages, and all characters. I had fe-' veral

veral good matches offered me, but I thought none of them equal to my merit; and one of my greatest pleasures was to see those women, who had pretended to rival me, often glad to marry those whom I had refused. Yet notwithstanding this great success of my schemes, I cannot say I was perfectly happy; for every woman that was taken the least notice of, and every man that was insensible of my arts, gave me as much pain as all the rest gave me pleasure; and sometimes little underhand plots, which were ! laid against my designs, would succeed in spite of my care: fo that I really began to grow weary of this manner of life, when my father returning from his embassy in France, took me home with him, and carried me to a little pleasant country-house, where there was nothing grand or superfluous, but every thing neat and agreeable; there I led a life perfectly solitary. At first, the time hung very heavy on my hands, and I wanted all kind of employment, and I had very like to have fallen into the height of the vapours, from no other reason, but from want of knowing what to do with myself. But when I had lived here a little time, I found such a calmness in my mind, and fuch a difference between this, and the restless anxieties I had experienced in a court, that I began to share the tranquillity that visibly appeared in every thing round me. I fet myself to do works of fancy, and to raise little flower. gardens, with many fuch innocent rural amusements, which although they are not capable of affording any great pleasure, yet they give that serene turn to the mind, which I think much preferable to any thing else human nature is made susceptible of. I now resolved to spend the rest of my days here, and that nothing should allure me from this sweet retirement, to be again toffed about with tempestuous passions of any kind. Whilst I was in this situation, my Lord Percy, the Earl of Northumber-' land's eldest son, by an accident of losing his way after a fox-chase, was met by my father, about a mile from our house; he came home with him, only with

d

0

n

d

d

g

A

d

d

e :-

with a design of dining with us, but was so taken with me, that he stayed three days. I had too much experience in all affairs of this kind, not to see prefently the influence I had on him; but I was at that time fo entirely free from all ambition, that eventhe prospect of being a countess had no effect on me; and I then thought nothing in the world could have bribed me to have changed my way of life. This young lord, who was just in his bloom, found his passion so strong, he could not endure a long absence, but returned again in a week, and endeavoured by all the means he could think of, to engage me to return his affection. He addressed me with that tenderness and respect, which women on earth think can flow from nothing but real love; and very often told me, that unless he could be so happy, as by his affiduity and care to make himself agreeable to me, although he knew my father would eagerly embrace any proposal from him, yet he would · fuffer that last of miseries, of never seeing me more, rather than owe his own happiness to any thing that might be the least contradiction to my inclinations. This manner of proceeding had something in it so noble and generous, that by degrees it raised a sensation in me, which I know not how to describe, nor by what name to call it; it was nothing like my former passion; for there was no turbulence, no uneasy waking nights attending it, but all I could with honour grant to oblige him, appeared to me to be justly due to his truth and · love, and more the effect of gratitude, than of any defire of my own. The character I had heard of him from my father, at my first returning to England, in discoursing of the young nobility, convinced me, that if I was his wife, I should have the perpetual satisfaction of knowing every action of his must be approved by all the sensible part of mankind; fo that very foon I began to have no scruple lest, but that of leaving my little scene of quietnefs, and venturing again into the world. But this, by his continual application and fubmiffive behaviour,

behaviour, by degrees entirely vanished, and I agreed he should take his own time to break it to my father, whose consent he was not long in obtaining; for such a match was by no means to be refused. There remained nothing now to be done, but to prevail with the Earl of Northumberland to comply with what his fon fo ardently defired; for which purpose, he set out immediately for London, and begged it as the greatest favour, that I would accompany my father, who was also to go thither the week following. I could not refuse his request, and as foon as we arrived in town, he flew to me with the greatest raptures, to inform me his father was fo good, that finding his happiness depended on his answer, he had given him free leave to act in this affair as would best please himself, and that he had now no obstacle to prevent his wishes. It was then the beginning of the winter, and the time for our marriage was fixed for the latter end of March; the confent of all parties made his access to me very easy, and we conversed together both with innocence and pleasure. As his fondness was so great, that he contrived all the methods possible to keep me continually in his fight, he told me one morning, he was commanded by his father to attend him to court that evening, and begged I would be so good s as to meet him there. I was now so used to act as he would have me, that I made no difficulty of complying with his desire. Two days after this, I was very much surprised at perceiving such a melancholy in his countenance, and alteration in his behaviour, as I could no way account for; but by importunity, at last, I got from him, that Cardinal Wolsey, for what reason he knew not, had s peremptorily forbid him to think any more of me: and when he urged that his father was not displeafed with it, the Cardinal, in his imperious manner, answered him, he should give his father such convincing reasons, why it would be attended with great inconveniencies, that he was fure he could bring him to be of his opinion. On which he turned from him,

him, and gave him no opportunity of replying. I could not imagine what design the Cardinal could have in intermeddling in this match, and I was fill more perplexed to find that my father treated my Lord Percy with much more coldness than usual; he too faw it, and we both wondered what could possibly be the cause of all this. But it was not long before the mystery was all made clear by my father, who fending for me one day into his chamber, let me into a secret which was as little wished for as expected; he began with the surprising. effects of youth and beauty, and the madness of f letting go those advantages they might procure us, till it was too late, when we might wish in vain to bring them back again. I flood amazed at this beginning; he faw my confusion, and bid me sit down and attend to what he was going to tell me, which was of the greatest consequence; and he ho-* ped I would be wife enough to take his advice, and act as he should think best for my future welfare. "He then asked me, if I should not be much pleased to be a Queen? I answered with the greatest eare nestness, that so far from it, I would not live in a court again to be the greatest Queen in the world; that I had a lover that was both desirous and able to raise my station even beyond my wishes. I found this discourse was very displeasing; my father frowned, and called me a romantic fool, and faid, if I would hearken to him he could make me a " Queen; for the Cardinal had told him, that the King, from the time he faw me at court the other night, liked me; and intended to get a divorce from his wife, and to put me in her place; and ordered him to find some method to make me a maid of honour to her present Majesty, that in the · mean time he might have an opportunity of feeing me. It is impossible to express the astonishment these words threw me into; and notwithstanding that the moment before, when it appeared at fo great a distance, I was very sincere in my declaration, how much it was against my will to be raised · fo

fo high; yet now the prospect came nearer, I confess my heart fluttered, and my eyes were dazzled with a view of being feated on a throne. My imagination presented before me all the pomp, power; and greatness, that attend a crown; and I was so perplexed, I knew not what to answer, but remained as filent as if I had loft the use of my speech. My father, who guessed what it was that made me in this condition, proceeded to bring all the arguments he thought most likely to bend me to his will; at last I recovered from this dream of grandeur, and begged him by all the most endearing names I could think of, not to urge me difhonourably to forfake the man, who I was convinced would raise me to an empire, if in his power, and who had enough in his power to give me all I desired. But he was deaf to all I could fay, and infifted, that by next week, I should prepare myself to go to court: he bid me consider of it, and not prefer a ridiculous notion of honour to the real interest of my whole family, but, above all things, not to disclose what he had trusted me with. On which, he left me to my own thoughts. When I was alone, I reflected how little real tenderness this behaviour shewed to me, whose happiness he did ont at all confult; but only looked on me as a ladder, on which he could climb to the height of his own ambitious desires: and when I thought on his fondness for me in my infancy, I could impute it to nothing, but either the liking me as a play-thing, or the gratification of his vanity in my beauty. But I was too much divided between a crown and my engagements to lord Percy, to spend much ' time in thinking of any thing else; and although my father had politively forbid me, yet, when he came next, I could not help acquainting him with all that had passed, with the reserve only of the struggle in my own mind on the first mention of be-'ing a queen. I expected he would have received the news with the greatest agonies; but he shewed no vast emotion; however, he could not help turning

ing pale; and, taking me by the hand, looked at me with an air of tenderness, and said, ' If being a " queen will make you happy, and it is in your power to be so, I would not for the world prevent it, let " me fuffer what I will.' This amazing greatness of mind had on me quite the contrary effect from what it ought to have had: for instead of increasing my love for him, it almost put an end to it; and I began to think, if he could part with me, the matter was not much. And I am convinced, when any man gives up the possession of a woman, whose consent he has once obtained, let his motive be ever so generous, he will disoblige her. I could not help shewing my dissatisfaction, and told him, I was very glad this affair fat so easy on him. He had not power to answer, but was so suddenly struck with this unexpected ill-natured turn I gave his behaviour, that he stood amazed for some time, and then bowed and left me. Now I was again left to my own reflections; but to make any thing intelligible out of them, is quite impossible; I wished to be a queen, and wished I might not be one; I would have my lord Percy happy without me; and yet I would not have the power of my charms be fo weak, that he could bear the thought of life after being disappointed in my love. But the result of all these confused thoughts was a resolution to obey my father. I am afraid there was not much duty in the case, though at that time I was glad to take hold of that imall shadow, to fave me from looking on my own actions in the true light. When my lover came again, I looked on him with that coldness that he could not bear, on purpose to rid myself of all importunity: for fince I had resolved to use him ill, I regarded him as the monument of my shame, and his every look appeared to me to upbraid me. My father soon carried me to court: there I had no very hard part to act; for with the experience I had of mankind, I could find no great difficulty in managing a man who liked me, and for s whom I not only did not care, but had an utter

aver-

e aversion to, but this aversion he believed to be virtue; for how credulous is a man who has an incli-* nation to believe? And I took care sometimes to drop words of cottages and love, and how happy the woman was who fixed her affections on a man in such a station of life, that she might show her · love, without being suspected of hypocrify or mercenary views. All this was swallowed very easily by the amorous king, who pushed on the divorce with the utmost impetuosity, although the affair I lasted a good while, and I remained most part of the time behind the curtain. Whenever the king menstioned it to me, I used such arguments against it, as I thought the most likely to make him the more eager for it; begging that unless his conscience was really touched, he would not on my account give any grief to his virtuous queen; for in being her handmaid, I thought myself highly honoured: and that I would not only forego a crown, but even give up the pleasure of ever seeing him more, rather than wrong my royal mistress. This way of talking, joined to his eager defire to possess my person, convinced the king so strongly of my exalted merit, that he thought it a meritorious act to difplace the woman (whom he could not have fo good an opinion of, because he was tired of her) and to put me in her place. After about a year's stay at court, as the king's love to me began to be talked of, it was thought proper to remove me, that there might be no umbrage given to the queen's party; I was forced to comply with this, though greatly against my will; for I was very jealous that absence might change the king's mind. I retired again with my father to his country-feat, but it had no longer those charms for me which I once enjoyed there; for my mind was now too much taken up with ambition to make room for any other thoughts. During my stay here, my royal lover often fent gentlemen to me with messages and letters, which I always answered in the manner I thought would best bring about my defigns, which were to come back again

again to court. In all the letters that passed between us, there was fomething fo kingly and commanding in his, and fo deceitful and submissive in mine, that I fometimes could not help reflecting on the difference betwixt this correspondence and that with lord Percy; yet I was so pressed forward by the defire of a crown, I could not think of turning back. In all I wrote, I continually praised his resolution of letting me be at a distance from him, fince at this time it conduced indeed to my honour; but what was of ten times more weight with me, I thought it was necessary for his; and I would sooner suffer any thing in the world than · be any means of hurt to him, either in his interest or reputation. I always gave him fome hints of ill · health, with some reflections how necessary the peace of the mind was to that of the body. By these means, I brought him to recal me again by the e most absolute command, which I for a little time artfully delayed, (for I knew the impatience of his temper would not bear any contradiction;) till he made my father in a manner force me to what I most wished, with the utmost appearance of reluctance on my fide. When I had gained this point, I began to think which way I could separate the king from the queen, for hitherto they lived in the same house. The lady Mary the queen's daughter, being then about fixteen, I fought for emissaries of · her own age that I could confide in, to instil into her mind difrespectful thoughts of her father, and make a jest of the tenderness of his conscience about the divorce. I knew she had naturally strong pasfions, and that young people of that age are apt to · think those that pretend to be their friends are really so, and only speak their minds freely; I afterwards contrived to have every word she spoke of him carried to the king; who took it all as I could wish, and fancied those things did not come at first from the young lady, but from her mother. He would often talk of it to me, and I agreed with him in his sentiments; but then, as a great proof of my good-

goodness, I always endeavoured to excuse her, by faying, a lady fo long time used to be a royal queen, might naturally be a little exasperated with those she fancied would throw her from that station she so justly deserved. By these forts of plots, I found the way to make the king angry with the queen; for nothing is easier than to make a man angry with a woman he wants to be rid of, and who stands in the way between him and his pleafures: fo that now the king, on the pretence of the queen's obstinacy, in a point where his conscience was fo tenderly concerned, parted with her. Every thing was now plain before me; I had nothing farther to do but to let the king- alone to his own defires; and I had no reason to fear, since they had carried him so far, but that they would urge him on to do every thing I aimed at. I was created marchioness of Pembroke. This dignity sat very easy on me; for the thoughts of a much higher title took from me all feeling of this; and I looked upon being a marchioness as a trifle; not that I saw the bauble in its true light, but because it fell short of what I had figured to myself I should soon obtain. The king's defires grew very impatient, and it was not long before I was privately married to him. I was no sooner his wife, than I found all the queen come upon me; I felt myself conscious of royalty, and even the faces of my most intimate acquaintance feemed to me to be quite strange. I hardly knew them, height had turned my head, and I was like a man placed on a monument, to whose fight all creatures at a great distance below him, appear like fo many little pigmies crawling about on the earth; and the prospect so greatly delighted me, that I did not presently consider, that in both cases defcending a few steps erected by human hands would place us in the number of those very pigmies who appeared so despicable. Our marriage was kept private for some time, for it was not thought proper to make it public (the affair of the divorce not being finished) till the birth of my daughter Elizabeth

beth made it necessary. But all who saw me knew it; for my manner of speaking and acting was so much changed with my station, that all around me plainly perceived, I was fure I was a queen. While it was a fecret, I had yet something to with for; I could not be perfectly satisfied, till all the world was acquainted with my fortune: but when my coronation was over, and I was raised to the height of my ambition, instead of finding myself happy, I was in reality more miserable than ever; for besides that the aversion I had naturally to the king was much more difficult to dissemble after marriage than before, and grew into a perfect detestation, my imagination, which had thus warmly purfued a crown, grew cool when I was in the possession of it, and gave me time to reflect what mighty matter I had gained by all this builtle; and I often used to think myself in the case of the fox-hunter, who when he has toiled and sweated all day in the chace, as if fome unheard of bleffing was to crown his fuccess, · finds at last, all he has got by his labour is a stinking nauseous animal. But my condition was yet worse than his; for he leaves the loathsome wretch to be torn by his hounds, whilft I was obliged to fondle mine, and meanly pretend him to be the object of my love. For the whole time I was in this envied, this exalted state, I led a continual life of hypocrify, which I now know nothing on earth can compensate. I had no companion but the man I hated. I dared not disclose my sentiments to any person about me; nor did any one presume to enter into any freedom of conversation with me; but all . who spoke to me, talked to the queen, and not to me; for they would have faid just the same things to a dress'd-up puppet, if the king had taken a fancy to call it his wife. And as I knew every woman in the court was my enemy, from thinking the · had much more right than I had to the place I fil-· led, I thought myself as unhappy, as if I had been placed in a wild wood, where there was no human creature for me to speak to, in a continual fear of · leav· leaving any traces of my footsteps, lest I should be found by some dreadful monster, or stung by snakes and adders: for fuch are spiteful women to the objects of their envy. In this worst of all situations, I was obliged to hide my melancholy, and appear chearful. This threw me into an error the other way, and I sometimes fell into a levity in my behaviour, that was afterwards made use of to my disadvantage. I had a fon dead-born, which I perceived abated fomething of the king's ardor; for his temper could not brook the least disappointment. This gave me no uneafiness; for not considering the consequences, I could not help being best pleased when I had least of his company. Afterwards I found he had cast his eyes on one of my maids of honour; and whether it was owing to any art of her's, or only to the king's violent passions, I was in the end used even worse than my former mistress had been by my means. The decay of the king's affection was presently seen by all those court sycophants who continually watch the motions of royal eyes; and the moment they found they could be heard against me, they turned my most innocent actions and words, nay even my looks, into proofs of the blackest crimes. The king, who was impatient to enjoy his new love, lent a willing ear to all my accusers, who found ways of making him jealous that I was false to his bed. He would not fo easily have believed any thing against me before, but he was now glad to flatter himself that he had found a reason to do just what he had refolved upon without a reason; and on some slight pretences, and hear-say evidence, I was fent to the Tower, where the lady who was my greatest enemy, was appointed to watch me, and ly in the same chamber with me. This was really as bad a punishment as my death; for she insulted me with those keen reproaches, and spiteful witticisms, which threw me into fuch vapours and violent fits, s that I knew not what I uttered in this condition. ' She pretended, I had confes'd talking ridiculous stuff with a set of low fellows, whom I had hardly ever ever taken notice of, as could have imposed on none but fuch as were resolved to believe. I was brought to my trial, and to blacken me the more, accused of conversing criminally with my own brother, whom indeed I loved extremely well, but never looked on him in any other light than as my friend. However, I was condemned to be beheaded, or · burnt, as the king pleased; and he was graciously pleased, from the great remains of his love, to chuse the mildest sentence. I was much less shocked at this manner of ending my life, than I should have been in any other station: but I had had so little en-' joyment from the time I had been a queen, that death was the lefs dreadful to me. The chief things that lay on my conscience, were the arts I made use of to induce the king to part with the queen, my ill usage of lady Mary, and my jilting lord Percy. However, I endeavoured to calm my mind as well as I could, and hoped these crimes would be forgiven me : for in other respects I had led a very innocent life, and always did all the good-natured actions I found an opportunity of doing. From the time I had it in my power, I gave a great deal of money amongst the poor, I prayed very devoutly, and went to my execution very composedly. Thus ! I lost my life at the age of twenty-nine, in which short time I believe I went through more variety of scenes than many people who live to be very old. I had lived in a court, where I spent my time in coquetry and gaiety: I had experienced what it was to have one of those violent passions which makes the mind all turbulence and anxiety. I had had a lover whom I esteemed and valued; and at the latter part of my life I was raised to a station as high as the vainest woman could wish. But in all these various changes, I never enjoyed any real satisfaction, unless in the little time I lived retired in the country free from all noise and hurry; and while I was conscious I was the object of the love and esteem of a man of fense and honour.

that to the property of the same and

On the conclusion of this history, Minos paused for a small time, and then ordered the gate to be thrown open for Anne Bullen's admittance; on the consideration, that whoever had suffered being a queen for four years, and been sensible during all that time of the real misery which attends that exalted station, ought to be forgiven whatever she had done to obtain it.*

* Here ends this curious manuscript; the rest being destroyed in rolling up pens, tobacco, &c. It is to be hoped, heedless people will henceforth be more cautious what they burn or use to other vile purposes; especially when they consider the sate which had like to have befallen the divine Milton; and that the works of Homer were probably discovered in some chandler's shop in Greece.

THEEND.

GUNG IN OW The field books will be the Right May 1970 Astri musica attende production and the production as the contract of The production of the later of the second of Chicago te exalterary recommended in the exalter the example of th THE RESERVE THE PROPERTY OF THE PROPERTY OF THE PROPERTY OF THE PARTY OF THE PROPERTY OF THE PARTY OF THE PAR a traditional busy to said insulate state \$2.5 and on the selection

